

0 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10

副

# 極東国際軍事裁判速記録

(英文)

第2.224頁から

第2.615頁まで

昭和21年7月10日から

昭和21年7月26日まで

国立公文書館	
国立公文書館	
分類	法務省 平成11年
排架番号	4 A 18 2233

法務大臣官房司法法制調査部

1969

副

# 極東国際軍事裁判速記録

(英文)

第2.224頁から

第2.615頁まで

昭和21年7月10日から

昭和21年7月26日まで

国立公文書館	
国立公文書館	
分類	法務省
	平成11年
排架番号	4 A
	18
	2233

法務大臣官房司法法制調査部

1969

日付頁索引 (第7巻)

審理 段階	検察側立証 (満洲武力侵略 一部南京虐殺事件)	
	午前	午後
年月日		
21-7-10	2224~2284	
15	2285~2294	
22	2295~2341	2342~2363
23	2364~2390	2391~2418
24	2419~2445	2446~2476
25	2477~2506	2507~2541
26	2542~2579	2580~2615
備考	1. 内容の索引については、各日速記録冒頭の Index を参照されたい。 2. 証拠資料(却下資料等を含む。)の索引については、「極東国際軍事裁判記録目録」の英文速記録頁欄を参照されたい。	

めくれず

Capt. Clark

21.7.10

July 10



物品標示票	
庁名	法務省
分類	法務省庁用品
種類・品	圖書
番号	第1873号
取得年月日	昭和4.8.23日

7

P 2,224-2284

1 Wednesday, 10 July, 1946

2 - - -  
3 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
4 FOR THE FAR EAST  
5 Court House of the Tribunal  
6 War Ministry Building  
7 Tokyo, Japan

8 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
9 at 0930.

10 - - -  
11 Appearances:

12 For the Tribunal, same as before.

13 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

14 For the Defense Section, same as before.

15  
16 - - -  
17 (English to Japanese and Japanese  
18 to English interpretation was made by the  
19 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

A  
b  
r  
/  
e  
&  
M  
o  
r  
s  
e

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
2 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: All the accused are present  
4 except OKAWA and HIRANUMA, who are represented by  
5 their counsel.

6 I have here a certificate from the prison  
7 medical officer, certifying that HIRANUMA is unable  
8 to attend the trial for the time being. Let it be  
9 recorded.

10 Does any counsel desire to mention any  
11 matter? Mr. Logan.

12 MR. LOGAN: If the Tribunal please, I wish  
13 to present a matter at this time on behalf of all  
14 of the accused, which we believe to be of vital im-  
15 portance in this case. This Tribunal has upon several  
16 occasions based its rulings on precedents which have  
17 been established at the Nuernberg Trials, and I wish  
18 to call your attention to a ruling which was made at  
19 the Nuernberg Trial with respect to the admission  
20 of interrogatories of the accused.

21 THE PRESIDENT: You are wrong in assuming  
22 we have been following Nuernberg slavishly. I have  
23 not read the decisions until the last day or two.  
24 We are always pleased to have their guidance, and I  
25 think in some matters we have followed them. I do

1 not remember any matter in which we have given a  
2 different ruling.

3 MR. LOGAN: If my recollection is correct, your  
4 Honor, I think it has been mentioned several times  
5 as to the rulings that have been made at Nuernberg  
6 and they have been followed here.

7 THE PRESIDENT: I will tell you one matter.  
8 Lord Patrick has reminded me several times that we  
9 are far more liberal to the defense than they are at  
10 Nuernberg.

11 MR. LOGAN: May I continue, if the Tribunal  
12 please? I think you will follow what I have --

13 THE PRESIDENT: We are not going to have any  
14 general discussion on Nuernberg rulings. If you are  
15 going to point out a ruling at Nuernberg which we  
16 have not followed, you had better wait until the  
17 point arises again. I am certainly not going back  
18 on any decision of mine because it may have been some-  
19 thing different than given at Nuernberg. We are not  
20 slavishly following Nuernberg, which I do not think  
21 we should do.

22 MR. LOGAN: The point on which I am about  
23 to speak, if it please the Tribunal, is now before  
24 the Tribunal with respect to these interrogatories  
25 which are being read.

1 THE PRESIDENT: You may refer to it.

2 MR. LOGAN: At the close of the Court yes-

3 terday, the prosecution was reading excerpts from a

4 statement which was purported to have been made by

5 the accused ARAKI. Now, the Tribunal's decision

6 on this matter is of extreme importance to all the

7 accused, in view of the fact that many statements

8 of practically all of them were taken while they

9 were at Sugamo Prison, and in all probability the

10 prosecution will offer them in evidence later in the

11 trial and we feel that the decision by the Tribunal

12 on this particular point will act as a precedent with

13 respect to all these statements to be offered later.

14 This Tribunal has previously ruled that

15 where excerpts from documents made by persons other

16 than the accused have been read by the prosecution,

17 that the accused may not read further excerpts from

18 the same document until the defendants' case is

19 reached. Now, with respect to the application of

20 this same ruling to statements by the accused, we

21 contend it should be different. It is sound law, and

22 I believe universally recognized, that where part of

23 a confession or declaration by the accused is

24 offered by the prosecution that the balance of the

25 document may be introduced and excerpts read by the



1 accused on the prosecution's case.

2 THE PRESIDENT: The balance may be tendered  
3 and part of an answer not read may be read, but not  
4 the whole of the answers. That is what you want to do.  
5 If you are right you can insist on the whole of the  
6 two interrogations of ARAKI being read immediately.

7 Talking about Nuernberg decisions, I want  
8 to remind you, for what it is worth, that there are  
9 four nations represented at Nuernberg; those four are  
10 represented here and seven other nations besides, and  
11 you are wrong if you think we are going to slavishly  
12 follow Nuernberg. We pay the greatest respect to  
13 their decisions.

14 MR. LOGAN: I am sorry, your Honor, but I  
15 think you misunderstood what I said. I specifically  
16 said that where part of a confession or declaration  
17 is offered by the prosecution, the balance of the  
18 document may be introduced and excerpts read by the  
19 accused on the prosecution's case. I did not con-  
20 tend that we should be permitted to read the entire  
21 document.

22 THE PRESIDENT: It is the duty of the pro-  
23 secution to read the whole of the answer, if the  
24 whole should be read. Otherwise they may mislead  
25 the Court.

1 MR. LOGAN: I appreciate that, your Honor,  
 2 but what we are contending for is this: that there  
 3 may be some other portion of this declaration or  
 4 statement which will explain away the portion that  
 5 the prosecution has read. And that is what we are  
 6 contending, that we should be permitted on the pro-  
 7 secution's case to read any other portion of that  
 8 statement which explains away any excerpts that the  
 9 prosecution has read; that we should not be required  
 10 to wait until the prosecution's case is completed,  
 11 so that then we could put it in on our case, be-  
 12 cause the decisions in the Nuernberg case, No. 81, 82,  
 13 83, that procedure was followed there and we contend  
 14 that the same procedure should be followed here.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Pardon me a couple of  
 16 minutes, Mr. Logan. Let us do something else.

17 Yes, Mr. Logan, go ahead; continue your  
 18 argument.

19 MR. LOGAN: Well, as I said, there are  
 20 three decisions in the Nuernberg Trial, which I  
 21 would like to read to the Tribunal. No. 80 -  
 22 (Reading;) "If the counsel for the prosecution  
 23 reads a part of the interrogation and you wish to  
 24 refer to another part of the interrogation, in  
 25 order that the part that he read should not be

1 misleading, you will be at liberty to do so when he  
2 has read his part of the interrogation." 81 --

3 THE PRESIDENT: If you raise an issue when  
4 they read part of an answer the only way for us to  
5 decide it would be to hear the balance of the answer  
6 in that particular case. We might trust you to that  
7 extent, or perhaps distrust the prosecution to that  
8 extent, but that would not be departing from any  
9 decision that we have given. If that is all you want  
10 I do not think it will be difficult to accommodate you.  
11 If you charge suppression against the prosecution, it  
12 is a matter we should immediately investigate and  
13 deal with you if you make a wrong charge. Sup-  
14 pression of facts is a form of fraud and we have to  
15 deal with it if you raise it. I do not think you  
16 need any further decision than that, Mr. Logan.

17 MR. LOGAN: May I say this, if the Tribunal  
18 please: I am not making any charge of fraud; I am  
19 making no charge of suppression of evidence. What  
20 I am asking for is not that the balance of one par-  
21 ticular answer be read by the defense. I am asking  
22 that some other part of that statement which the  
23 accused gave may be read by the defense in explana-  
24 tion of some statement that they read from an ex-  
25 cerpt. That is all I am asking.

1 THE PRESIDENT: That will give you too much  
2 of an opportunity to intrude into the prosecution's  
3 case, but if you were charging suppression by them,  
4 then we would have to investigate it.

5 MR. LOGAN: If the Tribunal please, we of  
6 the defense really believe that this is a fundamental  
7 proposition of law. It is the same proposition that  
8 is followed in all our courts, that where a document  
9 in the nature of a confession of the accused is of-  
10 fered in evidence, in our courts we are permitted to  
11 ask that the entire document go into evidence, and  
12 that the defense is permitted to read any other ex-  
13 cerpts in the prosecution's case. That to us is so  
14 fundamental, and that is what we are asking that this  
15 Tribunal follow.

16 THE PRESIDENT: Let us understand this.  
17 The balance goes into evidence as you require. The  
18 only question is how much you should be allowed to  
19 read. If you can say that the prosecution is  
20 suppressing a material part of an answer, then we  
21 will hear what the balance is, but you will be  
22 practically charging suppression of facts. I am  
23 supporting a decision already given by this Court.

24 MR. LOGAN: May all the defendants have an  
25 exception to your Honor's ruling on that?

1 THE PRESIDENT: My colleagues agree with me.  
2 You may take any exception you wish and that will be  
3 noted.

4 MR. HYDER: If the Court please, I should  
5 like to continue the reading of an excerpt of the  
6 interrogation of the accused ARAKI taken on February  
7 8.

8 THE PRESIDENT: I think you should have the  
9 amplifier closer to you Mr. Hyder.

10 MR. HYDER: I begin on the second question  
11 from the bottom of page 4 of the excerpt which the  
12 Court has. (Reading:)

13 "Q General, why was this an extra-ordinary  
14 session?

15 "A It was really an emergency session, as  
16 expenditures were required which would ordinarily  
17 have to be passed by the Diet and the Diet was not  
18 in session at the time.

19 "Q What expenditures were required?

20 "A Expenditures for the pacification of the  
21 four provinces, comprising General Chang Hsueh-liang's  
22 territory. Matters at this time were very urgent  
23 and could be compared to a fire, conflagration.  
24 There was no time for discussions or arguments about  
25 the types of pumps to be used and so forth."

1                   Continuing to the third question, page 6,  
2 of the excerpt which the Court has. (Reading:)

3                   "Q But at this time, there was a cabinet  
4 meeting in which it was agreed?

5                   "A I do not remember that there was a cabi-  
6 net meeting, but I do remember that I consulted the  
7 Prime Minister who was comparatively the Foreign  
8 Minister, the Finance Minister, and the Secretary  
9 of the Cabinet.

10                  "Q But the suggestion emanated from you?

11                  "A Yes.

12                  "Q At the preliminary meeting it was the  
13 unanimous agreement of all present that the appro-  
14 priation should be made and that the four provinces  
15 under General CHANG should be pacified and occupied  
16 by Japanese troops, was it not?

17                  "A The main object of the preliminary meeting  
18 was the appropriation for the army. The policy of  
19 occupying and pacifying the four provinces followed  
20 as a matter of course but this was not stated as a  
21 definite policy.

22                  "Q It was discussed, was it not?

23                  "A This would have been discussed because  
24 unless this was supported to the satisfaction of  
25 all, the appropriation would not be granted.

1 "Q It was the unanimous agreement of all  
2 present?

3 "A It was the unanimous agreement of the Privy  
4 Council members present at the preliminary conference.  
5 And when the question is taken up in the Imperial  
6 Conference, the members who did not attend the pre-  
7 liminary council would be present and the matter would  
8 be discussed. Members of the cabinet would also be  
9 present, and the decision would have to be unanimous."  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

1 "Q What was your answer in the preliminary  
2 meeting to their questions on the violation of the  
3 Nine-Power Treaty?

4 "A I do not think this matter was discussed  
5 at the preliminary meeting.

6 "Q It was discussed at the Imperial Conference,  
7 was it not?

8 "A No, it was not discussed. The only sub-  
9 jects discussed were the area of occupation and the  
10 object of the occupation. The violation of the Nine-  
11 Power Treaty might have been discussed at other Privy  
12 Council meetings but at this meeting the important  
13 question was the settlement of the affair.

14 "Q The area involved of which you speak being  
15 Kiorin, Mukden, Heilungking and Jehol, is that not  
16 true?

17 "A Yes. At the time a discussion arose as to  
18 whether it was three provinces or four provinces.

19 "Q They decided on four, did they not?

20 "A Yes, they decided on four provinces to keep  
21 Chang Hsueh-liang from retreating to Jehol and  
22 operating from there, it was also decided to include  
23 Jehol."

24 MR. McMANUS: At this time, Mr. President,  
25 may I inquire if the prosecution has these minutes



1 of the Privy Council meetings referred to in this  
2 statement, and if so, whether or not they intend to  
3 produce them later.

4 MR. HYDER: To my knowledge the prosecution  
5 does not have the minutes of that Privy Council  
6 meeting. ARAKI stated in his interrogation, and we  
7 found it quite true in most instances, that the  
8 records are destroyed at the end of ten years.

9 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: May I address the Tribunal?

10 If it please the Tribunal, we have exhibit  
11 83, which provides for the organization of the Privy  
12 Council. We have four records of the Privy Council  
13 meetings and the decisions which have been presented  
14 to the defense already by the prosecution, which con-  
15 tradicts the statement of the defendant ARAKI.

16 The reason why--

17 THE PRESIDENT: That is not a matter to be  
18 mentioned now. We will not hear you any further on  
19 this point.

20 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: All right, sir.

21 THE PRESIDENT: We are not accepting all the  
22 prosecution tells us as correct. It is all subject  
23 to contradiction at the appropriate time by the  
24 defense.

25 MR. HYDER: We next introduce prosecution

1 exhibit No. 10002.

2 CLERK OF THE COURT: It will receive exhibit  
3 No. 188-D.

4 (Whereupon, the document above  
5 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
6 No. 188-D for identification.)

7 MR. HYDER: These are the admissions of the  
8 accused ARAKI taken on February 8, 1946, at Sugamo  
9 Prison, page 6 of the interrogation.

10 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted on the usual terms.

11 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
12 No. 188-D was received in evidence.)

13 MR. HYDER: We offer this portion of the  
14 admission of the accused ARAKI to prove that ARAKI  
15 knew that the four provinces, being the Three Eastern  
16 Provinces in Manchuria and the province of Jehol, were  
17 part of China and the sovereign rights of the Chinese.

18 I should like to read:

19 "Q General, did every one at this extra-ordinary  
20 session know that these four provinces were of the  
21 territory of China?

22 "A Yes. A member of the Diet expressed surprise  
23 that four provinces were considered to be under  
24 Chang Hseuh-liang's jurisdiction. He thought Man-  
25 churia comprised only three provinces. He thought

1 these were called the Three Eastern Provinces from  
2 ancient times.

3 "Q So this demonstrates that they knew it?

4 "A Yes. The sovereign rights were Chinese,  
5 but at this time it was not definite whether these  
6 four provinces belonged to Chang Hsueh-liang or  
7 Chang Kai-shek, or to whom.

8 "Q That is the government you are speaking of?

9 "A Yes."

10 MR. HYDER: We next introduce prosecution  
11 exhibit No. 10004.

12 CLERK OF THE COURT: Marked exhibit 188-E.

13 (Whereupon, the document above  
14 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
15 No. 188-E for identification.)

16 MR. HYDER: These are the admissions of  
17 ARAKI taken February 13, in the afternoon, page 2.  
18 We offer this portion as the admissions of the accused  
19 ARAKI, Sadao, to prove that the decision of pacifi-  
20 cation and occupation approved by the conference was  
21 embodied in ARAKI's order to General Headquarters,  
22 and they took the procedure of sending troops.

23 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted on the usual terms.

24 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
25 No. 188-E was received in evidence.)

1 MR. McMANUS: Mr. President, I do not like  
2 to be bothering the Court with objections all the  
3 time. But I think I should object again to these  
4 preliminary opening statements before the introduction  
5 of each document. The document speaks for itself.  
6 It is the prosecutor testifying. The opening state-  
7 ment has already been made. Does he have to call the  
8 Court's attention and put it in the record before the  
9 introduction of each document, an opening statement  
10 as to what it tends to prove? The document speaks  
11 for itself. It follows the opening statement of  
12 Mr. Darsey.

13 THE PRESIDENT: It serves your purposes to  
14 save time. What Mr. Hyder is doing now is allowed  
15 at Nuernberg, strangely enough. We shall allow the  
16 defense the same privilege. But it must be a very  
17 short explanation, Mr. Hyder, and only when  
18 necessary.

19 MR. HYDER: We submit it only to show what  
20 we believe to be the ultimate facts supported by  
21 the evidence.

22 THE PRESIDENT: Do not make an explanation  
23 unless it is absolutely necessary in your opinion, or  
24 highly desirable.

25 MR. HYDER: I should like to read:

1 "Q General, what I want to know now is -- after  
2 the decision of the Imperial Conference, how did you  
3 order the completion of the occupation of these four  
4 provinces?

5 "A We immediately decided to send the troops  
6 to Fengtien Province. The principal plan was made  
7 in the War Ministry's order to General Headquarters,  
8 and they took the procedure of sending the troops for  
9 operation.

10 "Q Who signed the order? Did you, General?  
11 The order to General Headquarters?

12 "A The principal plan approved by the conference  
13 as a matter of procedure I signed.

14 "Q General, can you recall what was in the order  
15 that you signed?

16 "A I don't remember.

17 "Q Would it be in the files of the War Ministry?

18 "A I don't know that. It was so long ago that  
19 I am not sure whether we could find the document or  
20 not.

21 "Q It was approved by the Emperor, was it not?

22 "A The Emperor knew about the plan, however the  
23 order was issued by the Advisor, and as to the written  
24 order a document as old as ten years they would  
25 usually destroy."

1 Judge McKenzie will continue for the prose-  
2 cution, if the Court please.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Well, what is the next step?

4 MR. HYDER: Judge McKenzie continues, please.

5 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. McKenzie.

6 MR. MCKENZIE: If the Tribunal please, I  
7 desire to offer three extracts from exhibit 58, one  
8 of the basic documents, which is already in evidence,  
9 the first one being document 219-C -- 219-B, I am  
10 sorry.

11 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document 219-B will  
12 receive exhibit No. 189.

13 (Whereupon, the document above  
14 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
15 No. 189 for identification.)

16 MR. MCKENZIE: These three excerpts are com-  
17 plete telegrams showing the three assurances given  
18 by the Japanese government to the United States.

19 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted on the usual terms.

20 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
21 No. 189 was received in evidence.)

22 MR. MCKENZIE: "The Japanese Embassy to the  
23 Department of State. Statement issued after Extra-  
24 ordinary Cabinet Meeting September 24, 1931.

25 "The Japanese Government has constantly been

1 exercising honest endeavors in pursuance of its  
 2 settled policy to foster friendly relations between  
 3 Japan and China and to promote the common prosperity  
 4 and well-being of the two countries. Unfortunately,  
 5 the conduct of officials and individuals of China,  
 6 for some years past, has been such that our national  
 7 sentiment has frequently been irritated. In particu-  
 8 lar, unpleasant incidents have taken place one after  
 9 another in regions of Manchuria and Mongolia in  
 10 which Japan is interested in especial degree until  
 11 an impression has gained strength in the minds of  
 12 the Japanese people that Japan's fair and friendly  
 13 attitude is not being reciprocated by China in like  
 14 spirit. Amidst an atmosphere of perturbation and  
 15 anxiety thus created a detachment of Chinese troops  
 16 destroyed tracks of the South Manchurian Railway  
 17 in the vicinity of Mukden and attacked our railway  
 18 guards at midnight of September 18th. A clash  
 19 between Japanese and Chinese troops then took place.

20 "The situation became critical as the number  
 21 of Japanese guards stationed along the entire rail-  
 22 way did not then exceed ten thousand four hundred  
 23 while there were in juxtaposition some two hundred  
 24 twenty thousand Chinese soldiers. Moreover,  
 25 hundreds of thousands of Japanese residents were

1 placed in jeopardy. In order to forestall immin-  
 2 ent disaster the Japanese army had to act swiftly.  
 3 The Chinese soldiers, garrisoned in neighboring  
 4 localities, were disarmed and the duty of maintain-  
 5 ing peace and order was left in the hands of the  
 6 local Chinese organizations under the supervision  
 7 of the Japanese troops.

8 "These measures having been taken, our  
 9 soldiers were mostly withdrawn within the railway  
 10 zone. There still remain some detachments in  
 11 Mukden and Kirin and small number of men in a few  
 12 other places. But nowhere does a state of military  
 13 occupation as such exist. Reports that Japanese  
 14 authorities have seized customs or salt gabelle  
 15 office in Yingkou or that they have taken control of  
 16 Chinese railways between Supingkai and Chengchiatun  
 17 or between Mukden and Simmintun are entirely untrue,  
 18 nor has the story of our troops having ever been  
 19 sent north of Changchun or into Chientao any  
 20 foundation in fact.

21 "The Japanese Government at a special cabinet  
 22 meeting September 19th took decision that all possible  
 23 efforts should be made to prevent aggravation of the  
 24 situation and instructions to that effect were  
 25 given to the commander of the Manchurian garrison.



1 It is true that a detachment was despatched from  
2 Changchun to Kirin September 21st, but it was not  
3 with a view to military occupation but only for the  
4 purpose of removing the menace of the South Manchurian  
5 Railway on flank. As soon as that object has been  
6 attained the bulk of our detachment will be withdrawn.  
7 It may be added that while a mixed brigade of four  
8 thousand men was sent from Korea to join the  
9 Manchurian garrison the total number of men in the  
10 garrison at the present still remains within the  
11 limit set by the treaty and that fact cannot there-  
12 fore be regarded as having in any way added to the  
13 seriousness of the international situation.

14 "It may be superfluous to repeat that the  
15 Japanese Government harbors no territorial designs  
16 in Manchuria. What we desire is that Japanese  
17 subjects shall be enabled to safely engage in var-  
18 ious peaceful pursuits and be given an opportunity  
19 for participating in the development of that land  
20 by means of capital and labor. It is the proper duty  
21 of a government to protect the rights and interests  
22 legitimately enjoyed by the nation or individuals.  
23 The endeavors of the Japanese Government to guard the  
24 South Manchurian Railway against wanton attacks would  
25 be viewed in no other light. The Japanese Government,

1 with the Chinese Government in order to prevent the  
2 present incident from developing into a disastrous  
3 situation between the two countries and to work out  
4 such constructive plans as will once for all eradicate  
5 causes for future friction. The Japanese Government  
6 would be more than gratified if the present difficulty  
7 could be brought to a solution which will give a new  
8 turn to mutual relations of the two countries."

9 Counsel has called my attention to the fact  
10 that I skipped one line, if the Tribunal please, inad-  
11 vertently. "The Japanese Government, true to estab-  
12 lished policy, is prepared to cooperate with the  
13 Chinese Government . . ."

14 I desire, if the Court please, to offer  
15 IPS document 219-C, being the second assurance, given  
16 on November 24, 1931.

17 CLERK OF THE COURT: Exhibit No. 190.

18 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted subject to the usual  
19 terms.

20 CLERK OF THE COURT: 219-C received exhibit  
21 number 190.

22 (Whereupon, the document above  
23 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
24 No. 190 for identification, and was received in  
25 evidence.)

1 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. McKenzie, will you see  
2 that the Judges have these documents before you start  
3 to read them.

4 MR. McKENZIE: Yes, your Honor. I laid them  
5 all on the Clerk's desk before I began.

6 THE PRESIDENT: Do not start to read until  
7 I tell you.

8 MR. McKENZIE: Shall I proceed, your Honor?

9 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

10 MR. McKENZIE: 219-C, a telegram.

11 "The Ambassador in Japan (Forbes) to the  
12 Secretary of State. (Paraphrase) Tokyo, Novem-  
13 ber 24, 1931, 10:00 p.m. (Received November 24,  
14 11:45 a.m.)

15 "No. 234. With reference to the telegrams  
16 of the Department. At 6 o'clock this evening I con-  
17 veyed the purport of your messages to Baron SHIDEHARA.  
18 The attitude of the Foreign Minister was wholly  
19 conciliatory and cordial. He made the statement that  
20 the Premier, the Secretary of War, the Chief of Staff,  
21 and he are agreed that towards Chinchow there shall  
22 be no hostile operations, and orders have been issued  
23 to that effect. The clause in the draft prohibiting  
24 hostilities he agrees to, but is insistent that  
25 Japanese citizens must be protected by Japanese troops

1 against marauding bandits which infest the country.  
 2 In this respect the situation is extremely difficult  
 3 as these men who are actually members of marauding  
 4 bands claim to be soldiers one day and appear in  
 5 citizens clothes the next. There will be no objection  
 6 on the part of Japan, he states, if hostilities were  
 7 defined as operations between national armies. The  
 8 exact wording I have not undertaken to quote. The  
 9 retention of troops at Tsitsihar he states has no  
 10 political significance; and its purpose is merely  
 11 for picking up the dead, collecting the frostbitten  
 12 and wounded, and effecting evacuation. With the  
 13 thermometer 30 degrees below zero, troops have  
 14 operated over an extended area with great suffering.  
 15 The necessity for collection and caring for the  
 16 sufferers -- a matter of days -- is the reason for  
 17 the delay; when pressed he could not give me the  
 18 number of days but says he is also in complete agree-  
 19 ment with the officers of the War Department in the  
 20 policy of this evacuation; he claims that the fight-  
 21 ing reported in progress today is not near Chinchow  
 22 and is merely to drive off a force of bandits, not  
 23 exceeding 2,000, threatening to cut the South Man-  
 24 churian Railway."

25 After those assurances, if the Tribunal

1 please, I should like to refer again to the Lytton  
2 Report, on page 72, beginning with the second para-  
3 graph.

4 "The first--

5 THE PRESIDENT: You have already read that,  
6 have you? Do not read it again. Have you already  
7 read that?

8 MR. MCKENZIE: No, sir, I have not.

9 THE PRESIDENT: If you have not read it  
10 before you may read it now.

11 MR. MCKENZIE: "The first of these operations  
12 was the bombing, on October 8th, of Chinchow, to which  
13 place the Provincial Government of Liaoning Province  
14 had been transferred by Marshal Chang Hsueh-liang at  
15 the end of September. According to the Japanese account,  
16 the bombing was chiefly directed against the military  
17 barracks and the Communications University, where the  
18 offices of the Civil Government had been established."

19 Passing down further into the paragraph:

20 "According to Mr. Lewis, the military bar-  
21 racks were in fact not touched at all and a multitude  
22 of bombs fell everywhere in the town, even on the  
23 hospital, as well as on the University buildings."

24 Next the Nonni Bridge operations, the last  
25 two paragraphs of page 72.

1 "The next operation was that of the Nonni  
2 River Bridges, which started in the middle of October  
3 and ended on November 19th with the occupation of  
4 Tsitsihar by the Japanese troops. The justification  
5 for this given by the Japanese was that they were  
6 attacked while repairing the bridge over the Nonni  
7 River which had been destroyed by General Ma Chan-shan.  
8 But the story must be begun earlier and an explanation  
9 given of the destruction of the bridges.

10 "At the beginning of October, General Chang  
11 Hai-peng, the Garrison Commander at Taonan, who in  
12 former times had held the same rank as Ma Chan-shan  
13 and Wan Fu-lin, and had tried to become Governor of  
14 Hellungkiang Province in their place, started an  
15 advance movement along the Taonan-Angangchi Railway  
16 with the obvious object of seizing the Provincial  
17 Government by force. It is alleged in the Chinese  
18 Assessor's document No. 3, and this view is supported  
19 by information from neutral sources, that this offen-  
20 sive was instigated by the Japanese. In order to  
21 prevent the advance of Chang Haipeng's troops, Gen-  
22 eral Ma Chan-shan ordered the destruction of the  
23 bridges over the Nonni river and both armies faced  
24 each other across the large and swampy valley of that  
25 river."

Pages 73, 74 and 75 cover the detailed reports of that expedition and the fighting at Nonni River Bridge. Then is described the Tientsin Incident, and reading the last sentence from the next to the last paragraph on page 75:

"There were two outbreaks, on November 8th and 26th, respectively, but the whole affair is extremely obscure."

- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6
- 7
- 8
- 9
- 10
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14
- 15
- 16
- 17
- 18
- 19
- 20
- 21
- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 Then follows a description of the "Outbreak  
2 of November 8th, Japanese Version." And then the  
3 Chinese Version" and the Outbreak of November 26th,"  
4 and the "Conflicting Accounts." And, in view of the  
5 fact that no conclusion is stated, they will not be  
6 read.

7 The "Effect of the Tientsin disturbances on  
8 the situation in Manchuria."

9 I desire to read the last two sentences from  
10 the paragraph completed on page 77, and then the  
11 following paragraph:

12 "They also repeatedly threw bombs on Chin-  
13 chow, but news of the improved situation at Tientsin  
14 soon deprived the expedition of its original object-  
15 ive and, on November 29th, to the great surprise of  
16 the Chinese, the Japanese forces were withdrawn to  
17 Hsinmin.

18 "Another consequence of the earlier disturb-  
19 ances at Tientsin was that the former Emperor, who  
20 had been living in the Japanese Concession there,  
21 sought a safer refuge at Port Arthur on November  
22 13th, after a talk with Colonel Doihara.

23 "The districts evacuated by the Japanese  
24 were re-occupied by the Chinese troops, and this  
25 fact was widely advertised. Chinese morale was



1 slightly raised; and the activities of irregular  
2 forces and bandits increased. Profiting by the  
3 winter season, they crossed the frozen Liao River  
4 at many points and raided the country around Mukden.  
5 The Japanese military authorities realised that,  
6 even to maintain their existing positions, rein-  
7 forcements would be necessary, and with these rein-  
8 forcements they hoped to be able to get rid of the  
9 menace of the Chinese concentration at Chinchow.

10 "Meanwhile, the situation in Manchuria was  
11 a subject of further discussion in Geneva. When  
12 accepting the resolution on December 10th, the  
13 Japanese delegate stated that his acceptance 'was  
14 based on the understanding that this paragraph  
15 (No. 2) was not intended to preclude the Japanese  
16 forces from taking such action as might be necessary,  
17 to provide directly for the protection of the lives  
18 and property of Japanese subjects against the  
19 activity of bandits and lawless elements rampant in  
20 various parts of Manchuria.' Such action was ad-  
21 mittedly 'an exceptional measure called for by the  
22 special situation prevailing in Manchuria, and its  
23 necessity would end when normal conditions should be  
24 restored there.' To that the Chinese representative  
25 replied 'that the injunction to the parties not to

1 aggravate the situation should not be violated under  
 2 the pretext of the existence of lawlessness caused  
 3 by the state of affairs in Manchuria,' and several  
 4 Council members taking part in the discussion ad-  
 5 mitted that 'circumstances might arise there causing  
 6 danger to Japanese lives and property and in such an  
 7 emergency it might be inevitable that Japanese forces  
 8 in the neighbourhood should take action.' When this  
 9 matter has been referred to by Japanese officers who  
 10 have given evidence before the Commission, it has  
 11 been usually asserted that the resolution of  
 12 December 10th 'gave Japan the right to maintain her  
 13 troops' in Manchuria, or made the Japanese Army  
 14 responsible for the suppression of banditry there.  
 15 In describing the subsequent operations, they assert  
 16 that, while executing this right against the bandit  
 17 forces near the Liao River, they incidentally came  
 18 in conflict with the remaining Chinese forces near  
 19 Chinchow, which were in consequence withdrawn within  
 20 the Great Wall. The fact remains that, having made  
 21 their reservation at Geneva, the Japanese continued  
 22 to deal with the situation in Manchuria according to  
 23 their plans."

24 I now desire, if the Tribunal please, to  
 25 introduce IPS document 219 I, which I believe is

1 exhibit No. 191.

2 CLERK OF THE COURT: That's right. Document  
3 No. 219 I will receive exhibit No. 191.

4 (Whereupon, the document above  
5 referred to was marked prosecution's ex-  
6 hibit No. 191 for identification.)

7 MR. MCKENZIE: (Reading)

8 "Telegram" to "The Ambassador In Japan  
9 (Forbes) To The Secretary Of State (Paraphrase)  
10 Tokyo, December 22, 1931 -- 2 p.m., (Received December  
11 22 -- 5:43 a.m." )

12 May I call the Tribunal's attention to the  
13 fact that there had to be a correction in this. The  
14 word "noon" was left out after "after," and it occurs  
15 correctly on the copies served on the Tribunal and  
16 the Language Section but was not corrected in the one  
17 served on counsel.

18 THE PRESIDENT: I don't have it here.

19 MR. BROOKS: If the Tribunal please, I don't  
20 believe any of the defense counsel have this tele-  
21 gram. I have a complete list of all the documents  
22 that have been served to date in proper order, there  
23 on my desk, and I don't have that telegram.

24 MR. MCKENZIE: They were supposed to have  
25 been served a week ago Saturday. They would not

1 accept service, and they were served early Monday  
2 morning, I believe. That was a report given to me  
3 when I checked on it, and I checked as late as this  
4 morning to see if distribution had been made.

5 MR. BROOKS: Correction, if your Honor  
6 please: It has been filed under "2191." The "I"  
7 is run in as a "1." You can't tell the difference.  
8 I apologize.

9 THE PRESIDENT: Proceed, Mr. McKenzie.

10 MR. MCKENZIE: (Reading)

11 "Saturday afternoon Inukai called at the  
12 Embassy and I quoted the words of an observer who  
13 had told me that in Manchuria Japan was creating a  
14 situation which was fraught with the certainty of  
15 future war, for with the alienation of Manchurian  
16 sovereignty China would not rest a gun. I was  
17 assured by Inukai that never would Japan allow such  
18 a situation to arise and never would Chinese sover-  
19 eignty be impaired. He reiterated that Japan merely  
20 desired the protection of Japanese persons and  
21 interests, and expressed the expectation that with  
22 the restoration of order and improvement in the  
23 means of transportation in Manchuria there would be  
24 greatly increased influx of Chinese inhabitants.

25 "In the meantime, active preparations are

1 continuing for further operations in Manchuria where  
2 a free hand seems to have been given to the military."

3 Now, if the Tribunal please, I should like  
4 to refer again to the Lytton Report at the bottom of  
5 page 77:

6 "The 2nd Division, with the exception of its  
7 garrison at Tsitsihar, was concentrated west of  
8 Mukden. Reinforcements soon began to arrive; the  
9 4th Brigade of the 8th Division between December 10th  
10 and 15th. On December 27th, Imperial sanction was  
11 obtained for the despatch of the Staff of the 20th  
12 Division and another brigade from Korea. Changchun  
13 and Kirin were for the time being only protected by  
14 Independent Railway Guards."

15 And now on the bottom of the page, "All the  
16 statements here given concerning numbers of units and  
17 strength of the Japanese forces are based on official  
18 Japanese information."

19 Passing now to the "Attack on Chinchow" on  
20 page 78, first two paragraphs, first sentence of the  
21 following paragraph:

22 "The concentrated attack of the Japanese  
23 forces began on December 23rd, when the 19th Chinese  
24 Brigade was forced to give up its position. From  
25 that day, the advance continued with perfect regu-

1 larity and hardly met with any resistance at all,  
2 the Chinese Commander having given out a general  
3 order to retreat. Chinchow was occupied on the  
4 morning of January 3rd and the Japanese forces con-  
5 tinued their advance right up to the Great Wall at  
6 Schanhaikwan, where they established a permanent  
7 contact with the Japanese garrison in that place.

8 "The complete evacuation of Manchuria by  
9 the troops of Marshal Chang Hsueh-liang, practically  
10 without striking a blow, was not unconnected with  
11 the internal conditions of China south of the Wall.  
12 Reference has been made in an earlier chapter to the  
13 feuds between rival Generals and it must be remembered  
14 these feuds had not ceased.

15 "The comparative ease with which the offens -  
16 ive down to Shanhaikwan was carried out enabled the  
17 Japanese to release some of their troops from their  
18 original positions and make them available for ad-  
19 vances in other directions."

20 Next is "The occupation of Harbin," and  
21 reading from the first few lines of the last para-  
22 graph on page 78:

23 "The district which, at the beginning of this  
24 year, gave more trouble than any other was that north  
25 and east of Harbin, to which the remaining followers

1 of the two former Provincial Governments of Kirin  
 2 and Heilungkiang had withdrawn. The Chinese Generals  
 3 in this northern sector seemed to have maintained  
 4 some contact with Headquarters at Peiping, whence  
 5 they received some support from time to time. The  
 6 advance on Harbin began, as that on Tsitsihar had  
 7 done, by an encounter between two Chinese forces,  
 8 General Hsi Hsia at the beginning of January prepared  
 9 for an expedition to the North with the view to  
 10 occupying Harbin."

11 And passing now to the first paragraph at  
 12 the top of page 79:

13 "Colonel Doihara, now General, who, in this  
 14 emergency, was sent to Harbin on the 26th in order  
 15 to take over the office of the special Japanese  
 16 service there, told the Commission that the fighting  
 17 between the two Chinese forces around Harbin con-  
 18 tinued for about ten days, and that there was great  
 19 anxiety for the 4,000 Japanese residents, who mostly  
 20 lived in a menaced area, together with 1,600 Koreans  
 21 in the Chinese suburb of Fuchi-tien, who were ex-  
 22 posed to the danger of massacre. In spite of the  
 23 fact that the anti-Kirin forces held the town during  
 24 ten days of continual fighting, the casualties among  
 25 the Korean and Japanese residents were comparatively

1 few. The latter organised themselves into armed  
2 volunteer bands and helped their nationals to escape  
3 from the Chinese suburb. One Japanese and three  
4 Koreans are said to have been killed while trying  
5 to escape. In addition, one of the Japanese aero-  
6 planes, sent to reconnoitre the threatening situation,  
7 was forced to land owing to engine trouble and its  
8 occupants are said to have been killed by Ting  
9 Chao's troops.

10 "These two incidents decided the Japanese  
11 military authorities to intervene."

12 And then occurs a further description of  
13 that proceeding.

14 Passing to the top of page 80, the last two  
15 sentences in the first paragraph:

16 "On the evening of the 4th, the Chinese  
17 position was partly taken by the Japanese troops, and  
18 by noon of the 5th a final decision was reached.  
19 Harbin was occupied on the afternoon of the same day,  
20 and the Chinese withdrew in the direction of Sanhsing."

21 Passing now to the middle of the page:

22 "The Japanese operations since the beginning  
23 of February may be summarised as follows:

24 "Towards the end of March, the main part of  
25 the 2nd Division left Harbin in the direction of



1 Fangcheng in order to suppress the anti-Kirin troops  
2 of Generals Ting Chao and Li Tu. The Division ad-  
3 vanced as far as the region of Sanhsing and returned  
4 to Harbin in the earlier part of April. By that time,  
5 the 10th Division had arrived at Harbin and took over  
6 the sector from the 2nd Division."

7 First sentence in the following paragraph:

8 "In the earlier part of May, the Japanese forces in  
9 the north of Manchuria were further reinforced by the  
10 14th Division."

11 And then two-thirds of the way down in the  
12 next to the last paragraph, and completing the para-  
13 graph at the bottom of the page:

14 "The Japanese claim that, during the earlier  
15 part of August, the troops of General Ma Chan-shan  
16 were again effectively routed and that they have  
17 strong evidence that the General himself was killed.  
18 The Chinese assert that the General is still alive.  
19 In this action, cavalry newly arrived from Japan  
20 likewise took part.

21 "During the month of August, several minor  
22 engagements took place on the borders of Fengtien  
23 and Jehol Provinces, mainly near the Chinchow-  
24 Peipiao branch line (of the Peiping-Mukden Railway),  
25 which is the only means of access to Jehol by railway.

1 There are widespread fears in China that these events  
2 are only a prelude to larger military operations at  
3 an early date, aimed at the occupation of Jehol by  
4 the Japanese. The main lines of communication which  
5 still exist between China Proper and the Chinese  
6 forces in Manchuria run through Jehol, and the fear  
7 of a Japanese attack in this province, which is al-  
8 ready claimed as part of the territory of 'Manchukuo,'  
9 is not unreasonable. Its imminence is freely dis-  
10 cussed in the Japanese Press."

11 ' THE PRESIDENT: This will do for the time  
12 being. We would like maps to guide us, if you have  
13 them available, Mr. McKenzie.

14 We will recess now for fifteen minutes.

15 (Whereupon, at 1045, a recess was  
16 taken until 1100, after which the proceed-  
17 ings were resumed as follows:)

18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
P  
r  
a  
t  
t

MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now resumed.

THE PRESIDENT: Mr. McKenzie, before you proceed: The Judges have had a conference on the question of air-conditioning in this court. We are all finding the conditions of heat most oppressive. This is one of the gravest cases ever tried, and for its proper trial, of course, we should have reasonable comfort. We have not that at present. We have been promised air-conditioning for the last three, four, or five months. We were told that it would be ready as early as June; it is not ready yet, and we are seriously thinking of adjourning until air-conditioning is installed. One of the doctors has reported, and he supports our attitude. However, we know, without any doctor's report, how we feel and how the heat is interfering with the proper discharge of our duties.

MR. MCKENZIE: All I can say, if the Tribunal please, is that I shall be very happy to report it to the authorities and see if anything can be done to facilitate the matter.

THE PRESIDENT: Well, I can assure you we are tired of promises that are being made to us about air-conditioning, and we really feel that if we adjourn

1 that will speed up the air-conditioning.

2 We propose to adjourn at twelve o'clock until  
3 Monday morning at 9:30, and then we will review the  
4 position. We take that step with the greatest re-  
5 gret, but only under the greatest provocation.

6 Yes, Mr. McKenzie.

7 MR. MCKENZIE: With reference to the Tribunal's  
8 request for maps, I found, upon inquiring from the  
9 photostatic section, that I could probably obtain  
10 photostatic copies of the maps which were originally  
11 a part of the Lytton report, and deliver them to the  
12 Court by tomorrow morning, if your Honor thinks they  
13 would be helpful at that time.

14 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

15 MR. MCKENZIE: Passing now to the 5th para-  
16 graph on page 81 of the Lytton report (reading):

17 "The information given by the Japanese  
18 Assessor concludes by stating that, although the main-  
19 tenance of order in Jehol is 'a matter of internal  
20 policy for Manchukuo, Japan cannot be indifferent to  
21 the situation in that region in view of the impor-  
22 tant role played by Japan in the maintenance of peace  
23 and order in Manchuria and Mongolia, and that any  
24 disorders in Jehol would immediately produce very  
25 serious repercussions throughout Manchuria and

1 Mongolia.' General Tang Yu-ling concludes his re-  
2 port by stating that all possible measures were  
3 being taken to offer effective resistance should the  
4 Japanese attacks be renewed.

5 "From these communications, it seems that  
6 an extension of the area of conflict in this region  
7 is a contingency which must be reckoned with.

8 "Although the main Chinese Army was withdrawn  
9 within the Great Wall at the end of 1931, the Japan-  
10 ese continued to meet with opposition of an irregu-  
11 lar kind in different parts of Manchuria. There  
12 have been no further battles such as occurred on the  
13 Nonni River, but fighting has been constant and  
14 widely dispersed."

15 Then follows a description of the nature  
16 of the resistance offered by the Chinese; the rem-  
17 nants of the northeastern armies, the irregular forces,  
18 the volunteers and bandits.

19 Now, I would like to turn the matter over  
20 to Mr. Hyder.

21 MR. BROOKS: If the Tribunal please, I have  
22 listened to this dissertation on the affair as it is  
23 presented, and before making an objection as to the  
24 materiality, I would like for the prosecution to  
25 give us, as a point of information, whether this

1 matter, how it is related, so that I can properly  
2 understand whether an objection to the materiality  
3 would be proper at this time, the reason being that it  
4 is, as I understand this phase of the case, involves  
5 crimes against peace as charged in the Indictment,  
6 and the struggle being one between the Japanese army  
7 and the Chinese army. Now, as I understand the sit-  
8 uation disclosed from the evidence being put in here,  
9 this is not the Chinese Army of Nanking, or as  
10 recognized by the Allies or this Court as being the  
11 Chinese Army that should be considered as the na-  
12 tional army.

13 THE PRESIDENT: Your plain duty is to ob-  
14 ject, if you think that the evidence is not material.  
15 It is not for the prosecution to try to educate you  
16 on the point. You object now; that is your position.  
17 Give the grounds of your objection. But your atti-  
18 tude is most unusual. I have never known it to be  
19 taken before. Do you want to object or do you not?

20 MR. BROOKS: I wish to object, if the Court  
21 please, but I thought, in fairness to the prosecu-  
22 tion -- I understand the prosecution has the duty of  
23 bringing out everything before the Court. It may be  
24 possible that they are bringing this phase in to be  
25 fair, in showing the extent, because the last remark

1 they said was these men were rebels, robbers, and  
2 bandits. If that is the purpose I would not object  
3 to their presenting, before the Court, for their in-  
4 formation, but it, if it is to show aggressive acts,  
5 I question the materiality to show the aggressive-  
6 ness of the Japanese if it is not against the national  
7 army of China, because the circumstances show, and  
8 it is shown today in this morning's paper, these  
9 same people are still fighting the nationalists in  
10 China.

11 THE PRESIDENT: We take it you are object-  
12 ing. Now let us hear your grounds.

13 MR. BROOKS: The basis for the objection is  
14 that the prosecution, if it is placed to show an  
15 act of aggression -- that they have not connected it  
16 up -- they have entirely presented the matter of  
17 facts that occurred which are proper for defense,  
18 but the defense wishes to present its own case, if it  
19 please the Court, and at the proper time. But this  
20 matter as presented at this time does not show a war  
21 of aggression, or an aggressive act on the part of  
22 the Japanese against the duly constituted authorities  
23 of China, because these men, by the evidence read  
24 into the case, were bandits and rebels, acting as  
25 soldiers one day and citizens the next, and have,

1 therefore, not been recognized as the true authority  
2 of the national army as such, and their aggression is  
3 against the Japanese residents and people. There was  
4 something, as stated, that was provided for by treaty  
5 -- by the armed forces that were there. It is not in  
6 excess of the treaty rights, and, therefore, is im-  
7 material to that part of the case, if it is pre-  
8 sented for that part alone. If it is something else,  
9 I have failed to see where it is connected up.

10 THE PRESIDENT: If there is anything in  
11 this objection, it should have been taken days ago,  
12 when this line of evidence was opened up. We are all  
13 of opinion there is nothing in the objection, and it  
14 cannot be sustained.

15 MR. MCKENZIE: If the Tribunal please, I  
16 have just been handed a note from Eugene Williams  
17 asking me to please advise the Court that the prosecu-  
18 tion has those two witnesses from China, of whom they  
19 would like to have their testimony taken, if possible,  
20 before the Court adjourns, or some provision made for  
21 it.

22 THE PRESIDENT: We are adjourning on the  
23 grounds that the conditions of heat are such that  
24 we cannot discharge our duties in the way we think  
25 we should; and that applies to Chinese evidence as



1 well as to any other.

2 MR. HYDER: The prosecution next introduces  
3 prosecution's document No. 1871. It is the summary  
4 of Japanese war crimes in China from September 18,  
5 1931, to August 13, 1937.

6 CLERK OF THE COURT: That will be given  
7 exhibit No. 192.

8 MR. HYDER: It is a document prepared by  
9 and sealed with the official seal of the Ministry  
10 of Foreign Affairs, Republic of China. We ask that  
11 this exhibit number be for identification and  
12 future reference.

13 (Whereupon, the document above  
14 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
15 No. 192, for identification.)

16 We next introduce document No. 1871 C.  
17 That is a portion of section 1, pages 3 to 4, of  
18 court exhibit No. 192.

19 CLERK OF THE COURT: That will be given  
20 No. 192 A.

21 (Whereupon, the document above  
22 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
23 No. 192 A, for identification.)

24 MR. HYDER: I should like to read it.  
25 (Reading.)

1 "After the occupation of the three provinces  
2 Liaoning, Kirin, and Heilungkiang, the Japanese con-  
3 tinued to carry out their plan of westward expansion.  
4 In the Spring of 1932, when the war in Shanghai was  
5 concluded, their Army in the Chinese Northeastern  
6 Provinces was reinforced. In the middle of July,  
7 1932, on the pretext that a Japanese officer by the  
8 name of ISHIMOTO was missing, the Japanese started  
9 to invade Jehol. Two general offenses were launched  
10 in July and August respectively. They failed to  
11 gain ground on account of the Chinese garrison forces  
12 in the front and Chinese volunteers operat-  
13 ing in their rear. Yet the Japanese issued the  
14 fantastic declaration that Jehol Province was the  
15 territory of 'Manchukuo'; a pretext for its eventual  
16 occupation. Meanwhile, more reinforcements were  
17 sent to prepare another invasion on a grand scale.  
18 For the remaining half of the year, besides occupying  
19 quite a number of Chinese key points, small scale  
20 attacks occurred from time to time. There was no  
21 peace. At the beginning of the year, 1933, the  
22 Battle of Yu-Kwan (Shanhaikwan) was started, the key  
23 points along the Great Wall, such as Shanhaikwan and  
24 Kiumenkou fell into Japanese hands, the strategical  
25 situation of Jehol became very critical. On 22 Feb-

Faint, illegible text on the left page, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side.

1 ruary 1933, in the name of puppet 'Manchukuo,' the  
 2 Japanese Army sent to the Chinese an ultimatum,  
 3 stating that Jehol was not Chinese territory and  
 4 demanding that Chinese forces in the Jehol Province  
 5 be withdrawn within 24 hours. On 25 February 1933,  
 6 war broke out. The Japanese Army, from their bases  
 7 in Tungliao and Sui-Chung advanced in three columns  
 8 and commenced the general offense. For both mili-  
 9 tary and political reasons, the Province of Jehol  
 10 eventually fell into Japanese hands on 2 March 1933."  
 11  
 12 I should like to point out that the accused,  
 13 KOISO, Kuniaki, was Chief of Staff of the Kwantung  
 14 Army from August, 1932, to March, 1934; and that  
 15 the accused, ARAKI, was Minister of War during this  
 16 time.  
 17  
 18 May Mrs. Llewellyn continue for the prosecu-  
 19 tion?  
 20  
 21  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25

G  
o  
l  
d  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
Y  
e  
l  
d  
e  
n

1

MR. FURNESS: If the Court please, is this, as I understand it Exhibit No. 192, is not in evidence? It is just marked for identification. Is that correct?

2

3

4

5

MR. HYDER: That is correct.

6

7

8

MR. FURNESS: Then might I ask whether this excerpt is covered by an exception which the Court has allowed to rule 6 (b)?

9

10

11

MR. HYDER: This document is in Chinese, if the Court please, and was in the rule. May I read a portion of the rule applicable?

12

13

14

THE PRESIDENT: Has it been tendered yet?

15

16

17

MR. HYDER: Yes, the document has been tendered.

18

19

20

THE PRESIDENT: It is admitted subject to the usual terms.

21

22

23

24

25

(Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit No. 192 was received in evidence.)

MR. FURNESS: This is a long document and I understand under Rule 6 the entire document has to be served on us if excerpts are introduced unless the Court allows an exception to Rule 6 (b). All I am asking is whether that exception has been allowed.

MR. HYDER: May I read the portion of the rule which we believe governs?

1 THE PRESIDENT: Well, what is the position?  
2 Is it covered by any order of the Court?

3 MR. HYDER: No, it is not, your Honor. We  
4 believe that we came within the part of the rule  
5 which I should like to read, if I may.

6 "If the document is in a language other  
7 than English or Japanese" -- this document is in  
8 Chinese -- "it shall be sufficient for the purpose  
9 of this provision if a translation into English or  
10 Japanese, as the case may be, of such a document,  
11 is delivered to the prosecution or the accused con-  
12 cerned or his counsel, and to such officer."

13 THE PRESIDENT: You appear to have com-  
14 plied with the rule.

15 MR. HYDER: Mrs. Llewellyn will continue  
16 for the prosecution.

17 MRS. LLEWELLYN: Mr. President and Members  
18 of the Tribunal, the prosecution offers for identifi-  
19 cation document No. 1870.

20 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document 1870 will  
21 receive No. 193.

22 MRS. LLEWELLYN: Exhibit No. 193 is known  
23 as the Tangku Truce and is dated 31 May 1933. The  
24 prosecution offers this document to prove that a  
25 demilitarized zone was established in the northeastern

1 part of the Province of Hopei and that under its  
2 terms the Chinese National Army was forced to with-  
3 draw south and west of this zone.

4 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted subject to the  
5 usual terms.

6 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
7 No. 193 was received in evidence.)

8 MRS. LLEWELLYN: The attention of the  
9 Tribunal is invited particularly to Articles II  
10 and III. This is the Tangku Truce referred to in  
11 the testimony recently by General TANAKA.

12 "(I) The Chinese Army shall be immediately  
13 withdrawn to the West and to the South of the line  
14 running through Yen-Chin, Chan-ping, Kao-Li-Ying,  
15 Shun-Yi, Tungchow, Hsiang-Ho, Pao-Ti, Ling-Ting-Kou,  
16 Ning-Ho and Lu-Tai. The Chinese Army henceforth shall  
17 refrain from taking all acts of provocation or dis-  
18 turbance.

19 "(II) The Japanese Army, in order to ascer-  
20 tain the actual carrying out of the provisions in (I),  
21 may from time to time use aeroplanes and other means  
22 for observation. This shall be accorded due protection  
23 and various facilities by the Chinese side.

24 "(III) The Japanese Army, having ascer-  
25 tained the carrying out of the provisions in (I) by

1 "the Chinese Army, shall not cross the above defined  
2 line in pursuit and shall all voluntarily withdraw  
3 to the Great Wall line.

4 "(IV) The maintenance of order in the  
5 region South of the Great Wall and to the North  
6 and to the East of the above defined line shall be  
7 entrusted to the Chinese police force. The said  
8 police force shall not employ armed groups which  
9 might provoke the feelings of the Japanese.

10 "(V) This Truce shall come into effect  
11 immediately after being signed and sealed."

12 Mr. HYDER will continue with the documentary  
13 evidence.

14 MR. HYDER: The prosecution next intro-  
15 duces our document No. 1871-D.

16 THE CLERK OF THE COURT: Document No. 1871-D  
17 will receive Exhibit No. 194.

18 MR. HYDER: This is a portion of Section  
19 XIX, pages 105 to 107 of Court Exhibit No. 192.

20 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted subject to the  
21 usual terms.

22 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
23 No. 194 was received in evidence.)

24 MR. HYDER (Reading):

25 "In the middle of May 1935, two Chinese by

1 "the name of HU SU-PAO and PAI YU-HUNG were assassinat-  
 2 ed in the Japanese Concession at Tientsin. Seizing  
 3 this opportunity and blaming the Chinese for these  
 4 assassinations, the Japanese tried to develop a  
 5 situation to their advantage. SAKAI, Ruy, Chief of  
 6 Staff, Japanese Garrison Forces in North China and  
 7 T.KAHASHI, Tan, Assistant Military Attache of the  
 8 Japanese Embassy, called upon General HO YING-CHIN,  
 9 Chairman of the Peiping Branch Council, National  
 10 Military Council. They stated that the Japanese  
 11 Army considered the assassinations of HU and PAI  
 12 as Chinese acts of provocation against the Japanese  
 13 Garrison Forces. If such actions, unfavorable to  
 14 Japan and "Manchukuo", should continue to occur,  
 15 then the Japanese Army would probably take drastic  
 16 actions. They further demanded that General YU-HSUEH-  
 17 CHUNG be voluntarily transferred to some other post,  
 18 and the Third Battalion of Chinese Military Police,  
 19 the provincial and the municipal Kuomintang Party  
 20 offices in Hopei Province, Bureau of Political  
 21 Training of the Branch Council, and the so-called  
 22 "Blue Shirts" as alleged by the Japanese be withdrawn  
 23 too. In order to maintain the peace and the diplo-  
 24 matic relation, the Chinese Government thereupon  
 25 voluntarily ordered the dismissal of CHEN KUO-TSIN,



1"Chief of the Bureau of Political Training, CHIANG  
 2 HSIAO-SIEN, Commander of the Third Battalion of  
 3 the Chinese Military Police, and TING CHUN, Vice  
 4 Commander of the same battalion. Meanwhile, the  
 5 National Government also decided to suspend the  
 6 work of the Party office in Tientsin, and to transfer  
 7 the Governor of Hopei Province to some other post,  
 8 and to order local authorities to trace down the  
 9 assassins. But the Japanese were still unsatisfied  
 10 with all these changes and decisions. Soon after,  
 11 the Japanese again demanded that all Party offices  
 12 in Hopei Province be entirely abolished, the 51st  
 13 Army, the 2nd Division and the 25th Division of the  
 14 Central Army be withdrawn, and all anti-Japanese  
 15 activities be banned. These demands, furthermore,  
 16 should be acceded and put into effect at once, other-  
 17 wise, the Japanese Army would take unrestricted  
 18 actions. As the situation at that time was so  
 19 serious and grave, the Chinese Government in great  
 20 pain agreed to compromise for the sake of peace.  
 21 All Party offices in Hopei Province were voluntarily  
 22 closed, the 51st Army, and so forth, were respectively  
 23 transferred to other areas, and the National Govern-  
 24 ment reiterated the ban on anti-Japanese movements.  
 25 The Incident of Hopei Province was thereby concluded."

1           The prosecution next introduces the prosecution document No. 1242.

2           CLERK OF THE COURT: Document No. 1242  
3 will receive exhibit No. 195.

4           MR. HYDER: This is a letter from NISHIO,  
5 Chief of Staff of the Kwantung Army, dated December 9,  
6 1935, to FURUSHO, Vice Minister of War, received  
7 December 12, 1935.

8           THE PRESIDENT: Admitted on the usual terms.

9           (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
10 No. 195 was received in evidence.)

11           MR. HYDER: I should like to read excerpts  
12 of our offer, if I may.

13           (Reading): "Kwantung Army's Propaganda  
14 Plan Which Shall Be Carried Out in Parallel with  
15 its Military Activity in North China.

16           "I. General Principle. We start our propa-  
17 ganda to convince the whole world of our lawfulness,  
18 as soon as the advancement of the Kwantung Army into  
19 China Proper takes place. We shall launch out on a  
20 movement to estrange the inhabitants of North China  
21 from the central government, by fermenting anti-  
22 Kuomintang and anti-communism agitation among them."

23           "II. The program of propaganda." Paragraph  
24 5. "It must be made clear that when we do dispatch  
25

1 "our military force to China some time in the future,  
2 we do it for the purpose of punishing the Chinese  
3 military clique, and not the Chinese people at large."

4 Paragraph 8. "Our propaganda for Manchuria  
5 will be, that the appearance of the independent  
6 government in North China is nothing but a concrete  
7 manifestation of their longing for the fine admin-  
8 istration of the Manchurian government, and it will  
9 brighten the future of Manchuria."

10 "III. Execution program."

11 "1. Propaganda shall be planned and carried out  
12 by the Army staff. The special service facilities  
13 in China and Inner Mongolia and also the expeditionary  
14 forces there shall also perform the duty.

15 "2. Prior to the advance of our military forces  
16 into China Proper, this propaganda shall be launched,  
17 chiefly to support from the side, the propaganda of  
18 the Japanese government and the Japanese forces  
19 stationed in China. After the advance of our forces  
20 into China proper, it shall be performed so as to  
21 facilitate our military activities.

22 "3. Propaganda within their sphere of activities  
23 shall be carried out in conformity with the above-  
24 mentioned plan by the dispatched Force. As a rule,  
25 personnel necessary for such propaganda shall be

1 "raised by the dispatched troops. But, if it is  
2 impossible for them to raise the necessary personnel,  
3 Army staff section will solicit them. Propaganda  
4 section will be dispatched directly from the Army,  
5 if necessary.

6 "4. A close connection with the Japanese  
7 forces and various Japanese agents in China shall  
8 be maintained in the execution of this plan."

9 The prosecution next introduces its doc-  
10 ument No. 1871A.

11 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document No. 1871A  
12 will receive exhibit number 196.

13 MR. HYDER: This is a portion, Section  
14 VI, pages 21 to 22 of Court Exhibit No. 192.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted on the usual terms.

16 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
17 No. 196 was received in evidence.)

18 MR. BROOKS: If the Tribunal please, on  
19 this exhibit 195, it is apparent that this is a prop-  
20 aganda plan which was part of an administrative order  
21 of the Japanese Army, and I would like to request the  
22 prosecution, if possible, if they have it, to make  
23 available to the defense the balance of the administra-  
24 tive order so it can be studied to see what this  
25 discussion was in line with.

1 MR. HYDER: If we have the reply or request  
2 for this letter or report, we will be glad to furnish  
3 it.

4 THE PRESIDENT: If you have what?

5 MR. HYDER: This is a letter referred to,  
6 Court exhibit number 195. So far as our files indi-  
7 cate, it is the only document we have. We do not  
8 have the reply to it, if there was one, nor the  
9 request; but if we do, we shall furnish it.

10 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, there  
11 were two parts delivered to the defense and the  
12 first document, 1242, which is a heading or the  
13 outside, states this is a report dated December 9,  
14 1935, from NISHIO, Chief of Staff of the Kwantung  
15 Army to the Vice Minister of War. Now, I don't know  
16 what the paragraph number of that would be, of a  
17 propaganda plan, but I know that an administrative  
18 order would have such a plan -- it is not a letter,  
19 it is a report -- and that an administrative order  
20 has a propaganda plan along with the line of operations;  
21 and I think in the American Army, paragraph five, if  
22 we have a plan of propaganda that goes along that  
23 and that activity is taken care of, and I wanted to  
24 see what the rest of that document was, and in what  
25 relation, and if it was ever used. It would be very

1 relevant in this case.

2 MR. HYDER: On our document 1242 which is  
3 Court exhibit 195 now, originally, when this report  
4 or letter was mimeographed, they left off the title  
5 of what it was. It simply started out "Kwantung  
6 Army's Propaganda Plan" which was in re, or subject  
7 of the report, or letter as translated to us. I  
8 made the request myself for the information of the  
9 defense so that they would know -- have the complete  
10 report or letter to show them what it was. This  
11 document is complete in itself; and so far as I know,  
12 this is a complete translation in English.

13 MR. BROOKS: The defense problem on that  
14 is that since this heading is left off, we think  
15 the original should be made available so that we  
16 can find the administrative order and paragraph  
17 because it is customary in armed circles for a  
18 tentative plan to be presented to higher authorities.  
19 Now whether that was utilized or not, we do not know.  
20 There has not been any showing of that yet. If the  
21 prosecution does not show that, I want to at least  
22 have the opportunity of ascertaining what the document  
23 was, and if it was put in force, and by whom, because  
24 that would be relevant, who passed upon it, and  
25 whether it was in force in full or whether it was

1 altered or changed.

2 THE PRESIDENT: I think many of these  
3 differences could be solved if the defense referred  
4 to Mr. Darsey, the head of the section, in the first  
5 instance. It seems a pity to be coming to us until  
6 redress cannot be secured from Mr. Darsey. It seems  
7 to me to be a waste of time.

8 MR. BROOKS: My purpose was, in objecting  
9 to this, that it should not be allowed to go in  
10 unless there is a complete caption as was furnished  
11 us originally which was not put in on this part  
12 and shows the document itself, its numbers and so  
13 forth, so that such is before the Court and will be  
14 tied in when it is read so that later on when we  
15 are able to recover the balance of it, it will  
16 necessarily tie up, fit into the picture, and be  
17 explanatory of who was involved.

18 MR. HYDER: The original complete document  
19 is in evidence now as Court exhibit 195, the entire  
20 document.

21 THE PRESIDENT: Well, I don't see that any  
22 more is necessary.

23 MR. HYDER: The prosecution next introduces  
24 prosecution document number 724A.

25 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document number 724A

1 will receive exhibit number 197.

2 MR. HYDER: These are cables numbers 331:1,  
3 331:2, being dispatched on October 2, 1935 by  
4 WAKASUGI, Secretary General to the Japanese Embassy  
5 in Peiping. It is addressed to the Foreign Minister  
6 HIROTA, Koki, an accused in this case.

7 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted on the usual terms.

8 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibit  
9 No. 197 was received in evidence.)

10 MR. HYDER: I would like to read short  
11 excerpts from each telegram -- cable.

12 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

13 MR. HYDER (Reading): "My observations of  
14 the recent situation in this area lead me to believe  
15 that the Army is intending to organize a combined  
16 self-government (practically an Independent State)  
17 out of the five provinces of North China free from the  
18 domination of the Nanking Government for the sake  
19 of national defence and of forming an economic bloc  
20 of Japan, Manchuria and North China, and ultimately  
21 for the sake of politics, finance and economy."

22 Cable 331:2, first paragraph. "In addition  
23 to the aforesaid, the Japanese Forces' Mongolian  
24 policy is making steady progress as I and the Consul  
25 at Changchiakou repeatedly reported to you. The



Faint, mostly illegible text on the left page, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side.

1 \*Other day Maj. Gen. DOIHARA made a trip from  
 2 Chiangchiakou to Chengte and back and saw the Governor  
 3 of Chahar Province and Prince Te; his mission was  
 4 no doubt to promote the Inner-Mongolian self-govern-  
 5 ment. The Okura Gumi recently set up a subsidiary  
 6 company, Tameng Co.(with its head office at Hsin-  
 7 ching, and with Tuolun and Changchiakou as the  
 8 centres of its activity)for the purpose of economic  
 9 development in Inner Mongolia at the request of the  
 10 Japanese Army. It is merely a help to the above  
 11 policy.

12 "As stated above, the Japanese Army's  
 13 farsighted scheme is under steady progress."

14 Prosecution next introduces document  
 15 number 1871B --

16 THE PRESIDENT: We won't take any more  
 17 documents today. We will adjourn now until  
 18 nine-thirty on Monday next.

19 (Whereupon, at 1200, an adjournment  
 20 was taken until Monday, 15 July, 1946, at  
 21 0930.)

-----

1 "I have just received from Mr. ...  
 2 ...  
 3 ...  
 4 ...  
 5 ...  
 6 ...  
 7 ...  
 8 ...  
 9 ...  
 10 ...  
 11 ...  
 12 ...  
 13 ...  
 14 ...  
 15 ...  
 16 ...  
 17 ...  
 18 ...  
 19 ...  
 20 ...  
 21 ...  
 22 ...  
 23 ...  
 24 ...  
 25 ...

15/7

Q

林  
 分  
 補  
 光  
 有  
 多  
 事  
 務

21.7.15 41

(Faint, mostly illegible text on the right page)

1 Monday, 15 July, 1946

2 - - -

3  
4 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
5 FOR THE FAR EAST  
6 Court House of the Tribunal  
7 War Ministry Building  
8 Tokyo, Japan

9 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
10 at 0930.

11 - - -

12 **Appearances:**

13 For the Tribunal, same as before.

14 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

15 For the Defense Section, same as before.

16 - - -

17  
18 (English to Japanese and Japanese  
19 to English interpretation was made by the  
20 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
Military Tribunal for the Far East is now in session  
and ready to hear any matter brought before it.

THE PRESIDENT: All the accused are present  
except OKAWA and HIRANUMA, who are represented by  
counsel.

I have here a certificate from the prison  
medical officer at Sugamo Prison. He says:

"This is to certify that Kiichiro HIRANUMA  
was placed in the 361st Station Hospital on  
12 July 1946 for medical observation and treatment."

Let that be recorded and filed.

Chief Justice Higgins, of the Massachusetts  
Superior Court, with the consent of the Supreme Com-  
mander, has withdrawn as a Member of the Tribunal.  
Since his arrival in Japan a few months ago his  
immediate successor in office died, and the present  
Acting Chief Justice is in advanced years and poor  
health and Chief Justice Higgins does not feel justi-  
fied in placing the added burden of administering the  
affairs of a large court of thirty-one members upon  
him for the period of time it will take to try this  
case. I add my personal regrets at the retirement  
of Chief Justice Higgins.

We notice a change in the temperature of this

1 court this morning, due, I understand, not to the  
2 installation of air conditioning but to the operation  
3 of some other appliance. No Member of this court  
4 requested that air conditioning be installed. That  
5 was directed by the Supreme Commander, who had the  
6 advantage of medical reports. We are seeing that the  
7 Supreme Commander's directions are carried out.

8           Undoubtedly air conditioning is necessary  
9 in this building. This court is situated in the  
10 well of the building, ventilation is almost com-  
11 pletely shut out, the court is usually crowded and  
12 for a considerable portion of the time we have a  
13 blaze of lights more profuse than anything outside  
14 Hollywood.

15           Does counsel desire to mention any matter?

16           MR. JUSTICE MANSFIELD: If the Tribunal  
17 please, the question of the affidavits and reports  
18 in connection with the prisoner-of-war phase of the  
19 case was to be reconsidered by the Court. I ask  
20 leave to bring the matter and some further facts  
21 before the Court this morning.

22           I point out that the affidavits were not  
23 prepared for use in this particular trial, but were  
24 prepared as part of an investigation over the whole  
25 of the areas in which prisoners of war were detained.

1 Most of the affidavits, therefore, deal with condi-  
2 tions in several areas or several camps. In most  
3 cases the excerpts which the prosecution desires to  
4 use in evidence are taken from those affidavits and  
5 relate to one and possibly two of the areas referred  
6 to. The contents of the affidavits as to other  
7 areas are to that extent not material to the matter  
8 which is being used in the affidavit by the prosecu-  
9 tion.

10 As an example, I have two examples here.  
11 The first one is a report consisting of thirty-five  
12 pages out of which three pages referring to two  
13 camps the prosecution desires to use. The other one  
14 is an affidavit dealing with conditions in Hong Kong  
15 and Japan, and the prosecution merely desires to use  
16 three and a half out of fifteen pages, confining it  
17 to conditions at Hong Kong. The whole affidavit will,  
18 of course, be the evidence, the original evidence,  
19 and that, of course, will be lodged in court and will  
20 be available for the defense to peruse.

21 The number of pages of excerpts is approxi-  
22 mately 1500. A hundred copies of those have to be  
23 made, and that will amount to 150,000 pages. If  
24 copies of the whole affidavits are put in the number  
25 of pages will amount to approximately 10,000, and if

1 a hundred copies have to be made of the whole of the  
2 affidavits, that will amount to approximately a  
3 million pages to be copied. Approximately 80,000  
4 pages of copies were made before the rule came into  
5 force and they, of course, will be entirely useless  
6 if they cannot be used as excerpts.

7 With regard to other material, for example,  
8 the Allied Translation and Interpreters Section  
9 reports, ATIS reports, it is desired to use in evi-  
10 dence extracts from four of those reports. The re-  
11 ports run into, in some cases, one hundred pages in  
12 full, and only approximately one page from each is  
13 desired to be used. The extract is taken from a sec-  
14 tion of the report, which is different from other  
15 portions of the report, and the prosecution could, of  
16 course, copy the whole of the particular section from  
17 which the excerpt is made if it is excused from copy-  
18 ing the whole of the report. The complete volume of  
19 the report will, of course, be the original document  
20 which will be introduced in evidence. There are  
21 other proceedings, such as the transcript proceedings  
22 of Japanese investigation into the massacre at Naha,

23 MR. McMANUS: Mr. President, if the Tribunal  
24 pleases, I ask that counsel be requested to refrain  
25 from characterizing, using such words as "massacre at

1 Naha." That is to be determined by the Court.

2 THE PRESIDENT: You are unduly sensitive.  
3 These terms are employed by the prosecution at times.  
4 It does not follow the Court accepts them.

5 MR. JUSTICE MANSFIELD: The proceedings  
6 relating to the alleged massacre run into a number of  
7 pages, and it is intended, or desired, by the prose-  
8 cution to use only the evidence of two witnesses who  
9 were eyewitnesses of the events which form the sub-  
10 stance of the alleged massacre; and it is, therefore,  
11 desired to be excused from copying the whole of the  
12 proceedings, and in place of that that the evidence  
13 of two witnesses, eyewitnesses, alone, the complete  
14 evidence, be copied so that they can be distributed  
15 to the defense. The complete transcript runs into  
16 over three hundred pages, and the number of pages to  
17 be used will be very much less than that.

18 I, therefore, ask the Tribunal grant the appli-  
19 cation of the prosecution with regard to the documents  
20 which I have mentioned and allow the prosecution to  
21 provide copies of the excerpts for the defense, and  
22 that the whole document will, of course, in the ordi-  
23 nary course be presented to the Secretariat and will  
24 be available for use by the defense.  
25



G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. McCormack.

2 MR. McCORMACK: If the Tribunal please, on

3 July 3 last, it is my understanding that the Court,

4 after taking some time during a recess, entered an

5 order for the prosecution to introduce these ex-

6 cerpts, to file the originals, to lodge them with

7 the Clerk of the Court, to give the defense counsel

8 ample facilities to examine them; and then, in one

9 month from July 3, copies of these documents were

10 supposed to be furnished the defense; thirdly, that

11 the defense was to be furnished the addresses of the

12 affiants in these affidavits and reports to the

13 extent to which they are available to the prosecu-

14 tion.

15 I might mention further that things the

16 counsel says are unfamiliar to us. He steps up with-

17 out any prior notice on our part and addresses the

18 Court on this matter. It would seem to the defense

19 more logical in a proper procedure if, before these

20 matters are brought to the Tribunal, the defense

21 were furnished copies of the excerpts that they

22 intend to submit in evidence. Under those circum-

23 stances, we would have a better idea about what is

24 going on, what is trying to be introduced, and better

25 able to defend ourselves against this particular

1 motion.

2 MR. JUSTICE MANSFIELD: I've been informed  
3 that I said that the whole report would be in evi-  
4 dence. That is not correct. The whole report will  
5 be produced, of course, but only the particular part  
6 relied upon will be in evidence. I desire my previous  
7 statement to be corrected to that extent.

8 I would suggest, in reply to what has been  
9 stated, on the fifth of July the Court stated that  
10 it would reconsider the matter. Speaking from  
11 memory, it was either the fifth or sixth of July  
12 when the Court said it would reconsider the matter,  
13 and also no order was made in connection with ATIS  
14 and other reports by the Court; and, if the copies  
15 of excerpts are furnished to the defense as re-  
16 quested by the defense, then, of course, it will  
17 mean, in the event of the whole affidavit being put  
18 in, the work will have to be done twice, and in-  
19 stead of one million pages, there will probably be  
20 two million.

21 MR. FURNESS: If the Court please, the de-  
22 fense understands that this substantially has already  
23 been decided in open Court. Certain questions were  
24 raised, after that decision in the afternoon of the  
25 third, by Mr. Justice Mansfield. The Court took

1 those under consideration. We also remember that  
2 the Court considered the matters in Chambers and, at  
3 that time, reached no decision on those matters. I  
4 think I'm correct on that.

5 We ask the Court to adhere to its decision  
6 and, certainly, to give us the names and addresses  
7 of all persons making the affidavits, so far as they  
8 are available, the names and addresses of all persons  
9 making reports which have been mentioned, ATIS and  
10 otherwise.

11 THE PRESIDENT: Some modification on the  
12 decision appears to be necessary because the prose-  
13 cution haven't copies of all the documents so that  
14 they may comply with the decision.

15 MR. FURNESS: My understanding is that the  
16 Court ordered them to make copies and that the dif-  
17 ficulties are mechanical difficulties which could be  
18 solved, and those mechanical difficulties should not  
19 be taken advantage of in order not to comply with  
20 the Court's order.

21 THE PRESIDENT: The Court will reconsider  
22 the whole matter.

23 Mr. Darsey.

24 MR. DARSEY: Mr. President, I should like  
25 at this time to present some of the counsel in charge

1 of the China Aggression phase of the case who, at  
2 this time, pursuant to order of the Court, will pre-  
3 sent the testimony of some of the Chinese witnesses  
4 who have to return to China.

5 Colonel Thomas H. Morrow, member of the  
6 Ohio Bar, on leave from the Common Pleas Court of  
7 that State;

8 Kenneth N. Parkinson, member of the Court of  
9 the District of Columbia and the United States  
10 Supreme Court; and

11 Major James H. Brock of the Boston, Massa-  
12 chusetts Bar.

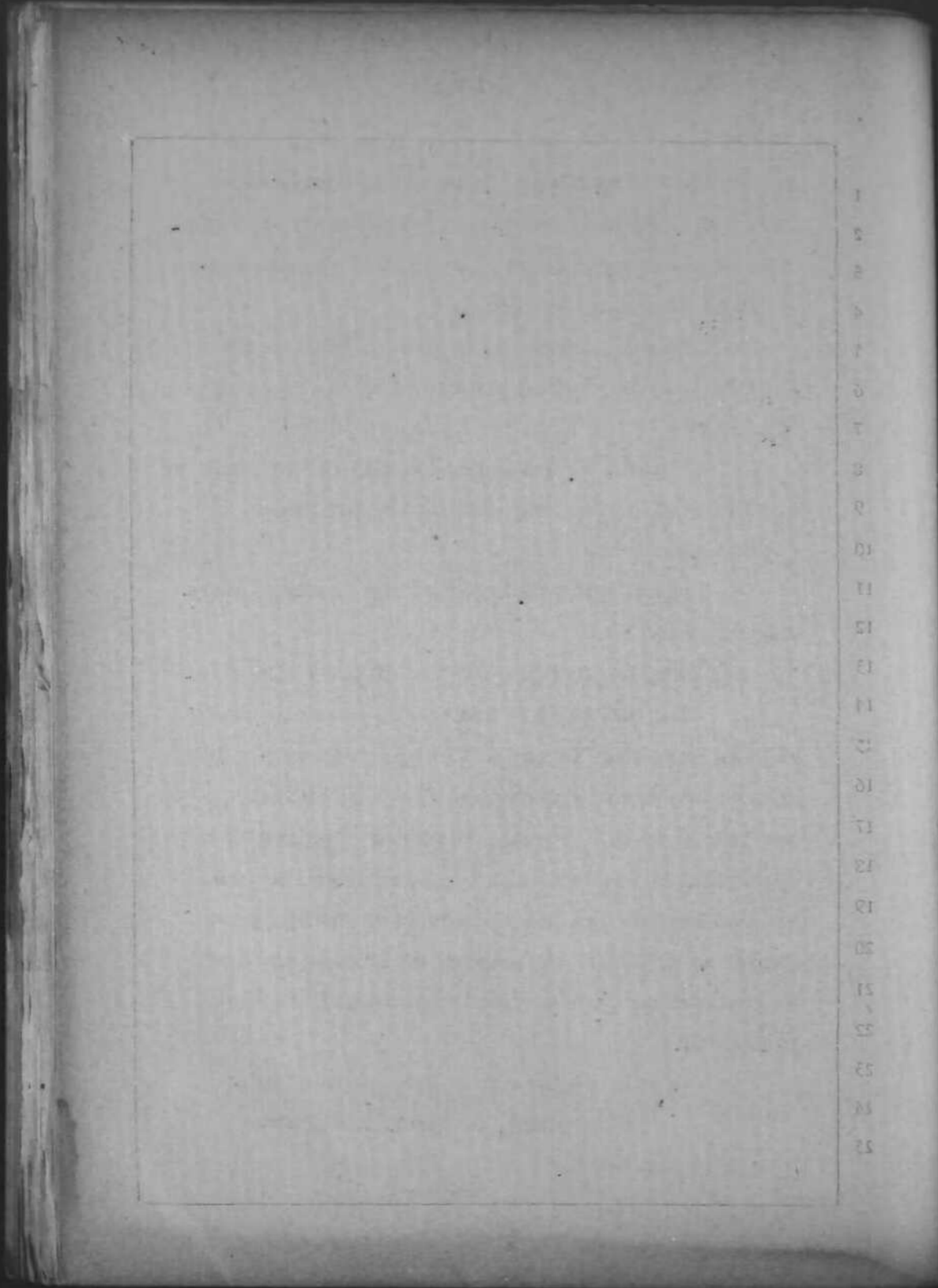
13 COLONEL MORROW: If the Tribunal please --

14 THE PRESIDENT: Before you commence, Major,  
15 we have just been informed that the temporary relief  
16 we got this morning from that blast of cold air is  
17 not likely to last because the water supply will not  
18 allow it. We are now about to experience the same  
19 severe heat that we did on Wednesday when we were  
20 forced to adjourn. We propose to adjourn now until  
21 we are advised that the air conditioning has been  
22 installed.

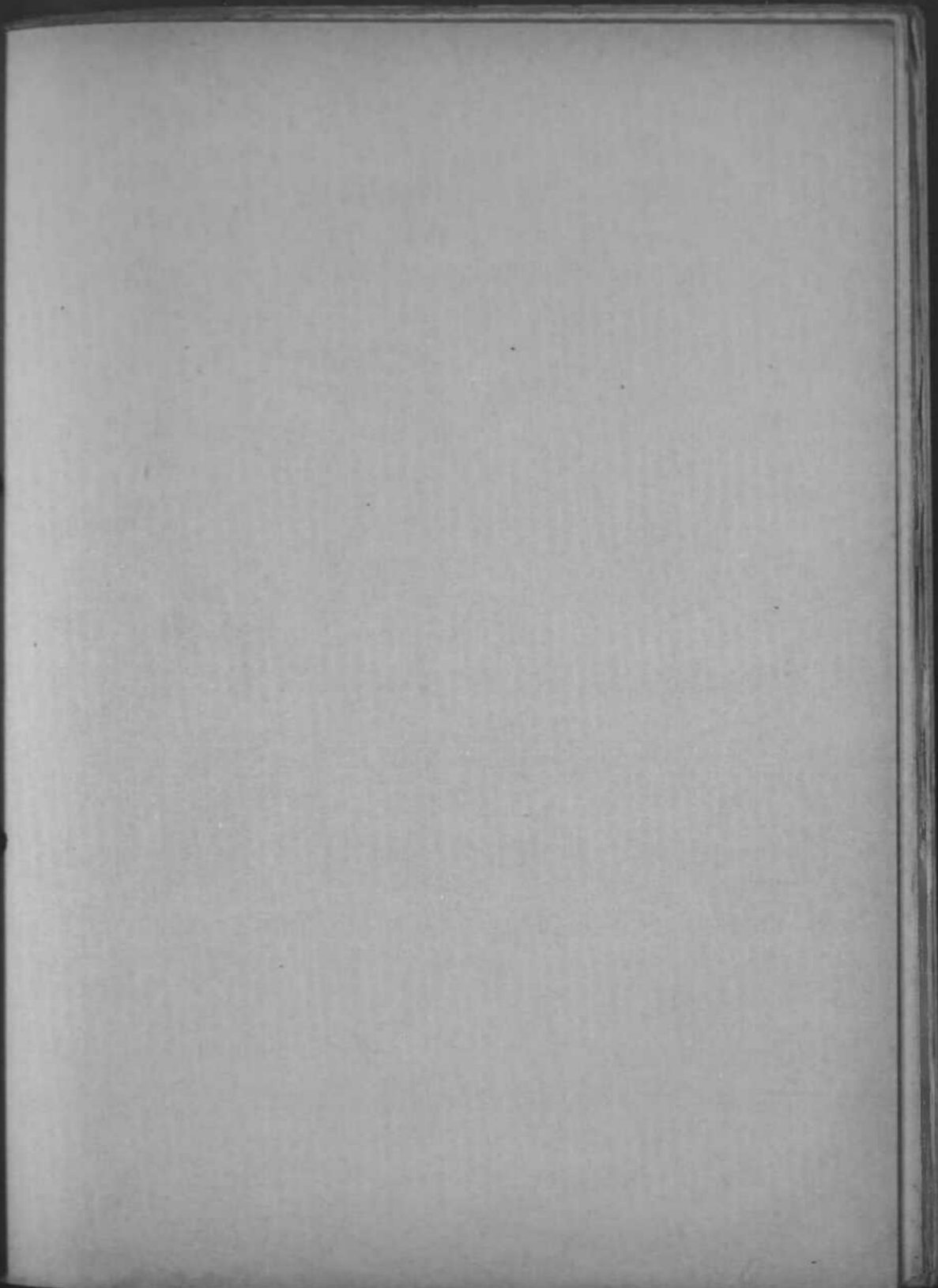
23 We will adjourn to a date to be fixed.

24 (Whereupon, at 1010, an adjourn-  
25 ment was taken.)

- - - -



1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



Capt. Clarke

21.7.22

22 July

Record of Proceedings  
of the  
INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
FOR THE FAR EAST

Court House of the Tribunal  
War Ministry Building  
Tokyo, Japan

The United States of America, the Republic of China,  
the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland,  
the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, the Commonwealth of  
Australia, Canada, the Republic of France, the Kingdom of  
the Netherlands, New Zealand, India, and the Commonwealth  
of the Philippine

-Against-

ARAKI, Sadao; DOHIHARA, Kenji; HASHIMOTO,  
Kingoro; HATA, Shunroku; HIRANUMA, Kuchiro; HIRO-  
TA, Koki; HOSHINO, Naoki; ITAGAKI, Seishiro; KAYA,  
Okinori; KIDO, Koichi; KIMURA, Heitaro; KOISO, Kuni-  
aki; MATSUI, Iwane; MATSUOKA, Yosuke; MINAMI,  
Jiro; MUTO, Akira; NAGANO, Osami; OKA, Takasumi;  
OKAWA, Shumei; OSHIMA, Hiroshi; SATO, Kenryo; SHI-  
GEMITSU, Mamoru; SHIMADA, Shigetaro; SHIRATO-  
RI, Toshio; SUZUKI, Teichi; TOGO, Shigenori; TOJO,  
Hideki; UMEZU, Youshijiro;

-Accused-

Official Court Reporters

- Jack Granberg, Chief
- Fred T. Allen
- James F. Burton
- Alfred G. Duda
- Samuel Goldberg
- Robert H. Morse
- John J. Smith
- Daphne Spcott
- Eileen Whalen
- Olivia Wolf
- Leona Yelden

22 JULY 1946

Page 1.

I N D E X

of

WITNESSES

Prosecution's Witnesses

Direct Cross

Ching Teh-chun	2298	2335 2361
----------------	------	--------------

I N D E X

of

EXHIBITS

Pros. No.

Description

For In  
Ident. Evidence.

198	Statement made by General Ching Teh-chun	2297	
199	Same as above	2297	
200	Photograph of Pinj-Han Railroad Bridge	2308	2308
201	Bird's-eye view of Lukuoichiao	2308	2308

I N D E X

of

MOTIONS, ARGUMENTS, DECISIONS, OBJECTIONS IN  
OPEN COURT

Page

Change of American Defense Counsel for Accused TOGO, Shigenori	2296
Statement that Chinese interpreters had been sworn	2299
Objection by Major Blakeney to reading of statements of Ching Teh-chun	2301
Argument re Chinese interpreters	2303-2306
Mr. W. F. S. Fang sworn as Chinese interpreter	2306
Waiver as to certificate	2309
Objection by Mr. McManus as to reading of statements	2324

22 JULY 1946

Page 2.

Page

Objection overruled	2324
Challenge to Member Honorable Major General Myron C. Cramer, Representative of the United States, and arguments thereon	2342-2360
Decision Reserved	2360
Challenge overruled and motion dismissed	2361

- - - -



1 Monday, 22 July, 1946

2 - - -

3  
4 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
5 FOR THE FAR EAST  
6 Court House of the Tribunal  
7 War Ministry Building  
8 Tokyo, Japan

9 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
10 at 0930.

11 - - -

12 Appearances:

13 For the Tribunal, same as before.

14 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

15 For the Defense Section, same as before with  
16 the addition of MAJOR BEN BRUCE BLAKENEY as additional  
17 Counsel for Accused TOGO, Shigenori.

18 - - -

19  
20 (English to Japanese, Japanese to  
21 English, English to Chinese, and Chinese to  
22 English interpretation was made by the  
23 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
24  
25

A  
b  
r  
a  
m  
&  
M  
o  
r  
r  
o  
w  
&  
M  
o  
r  
r  
o  
w

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
2 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now in session  
3 and ready to hear any matter brought before it.

4 THE PRESIDENT: All the accused are present  
5 except OKAWA and HIRANUMA, who are represented by  
6 counsel.

7 Does any counsel desire to mention any  
8 matter?

9 Mr. Yamaoka.

10 MR. YAMAOKA: If the Tribunal please, I de-  
11 sire to announce this morning the appearance of Major  
12 Ben Bruce Blakeney, who is already counsel for General  
13 UMEZU, as the additional American defense counsel for  
14 the accused TOGO, Shigenori. He has duly filed his  
15 appearance with the Secretariat.

16 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Morrow.

17 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I  
18 desire to call out of turn, pursuant to permission  
19 of this Court, a witness from the Republic of China,  
20 General Ching Teh-Chun.

21 THE PRESIDENT: The Tribunal has no objec-  
22 tion. You may call the General.

23 COLONEL MORROW: And in connection there-  
24 with, if the Court please, I desire to present two  
25 affidavits, entitled document No. 2340 and document

1 No. 1750, which are statements made by the General,  
2 which we intend to submit as his testimony in chief.

3 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document No. 1750 will  
4 be marked exhibit 198. Document No. 2340 will be  
5 marked exhibit No. 199.

6 (Whereupon, the documents above re-  
7 ferred to were marked prosecution's exhibits  
8 No. 198 and No. 199 for identification.)

9 THE PRESIDENT: This is not an affidavit,  
10 Colonel.

11 COLONEL MORROW: I see I probably in-  
12 accurately stated what it was. It is a statement.

13 THE PRESIDENT: Well, you have no order  
14 covering it.

15 COLONEL MORROW: I desire to submit these  
16 statements to the General for his scrutiny now.

17 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: Mr. President, the  
18 witness is now in court and will be sworn.

CHING

DIRECT

1 CHING TEH - CHUN, called as a witness,  
2 on behalf of the prosecution, being first duly  
3 sworn, testified as follows:

4 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I  
5 understand that these statements were taken with  
6 the solemnity and in the manner that a truthful  
7 statement is submitted by a national of the Republic  
8 of China.

9 THE PRESIDENT: Is that the Chinese form?

10 COLONEL MORROW: I understand it is the  
11 Chinese form, yes, sir. The General's statements  
12 to be received according to his conscience as the  
13 truth.

14 THE PRESIDENT: We understand from the  
15 representative of China that this is a Chinese  
16 form. On that understanding, we will allow you to  
17 ask the witness whether the contents are true and  
18 to swear to their contents in the usual way as if  
19 it were an affidavit.

20 DIRECT EXAMINATION

21 BY COLONEL MORROW:

22 Q I will ask the General therefore, if he is  
23 General Ching Teh-chun, who has made the statements  
24 now in his hands, and if they are the truth, con-  
25 stitute the truth in accordance with his conscience?

CHING

DIRECT

1           A    The facts therein stated are true except  
2           for the fact that there are two words which are in  
3           error. The first error is with respect to the  
4           July 7 Incident, paragraph 2, under "B. Stages of  
5           Japanese Aggressions," with reference to economic  
6           monopoly. In the Chinese text of the statement the  
7           name of the railroad is given in the text as the  
8           Tsang-shih Railway. The correct name for this rail-  
9           way is the Tsin-Shih Railway. In the last part of  
10          the statement the Chinese text gives my title as  
11          Commander of the 29th Army, when it should correctly  
12          read Deputy Commander of the 29th Army.

13           CAPTAIN BROOKS: If the Tribunal please,  
14           for a matter of the record, I don't know whether  
15           it has been observed or not whether the Chinese  
16           translators have been sworn or not. I would just  
17           like, as a point of information, to know whether  
18           they have.

19           THE PRESIDENT: I inquired and found that  
20           they were.

21           CAPTAIN BROOKS: Thank you.

22           MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, some  
23           of the defense counsel are under the impression, as  
24           I am, that the Chinese is being interpreted into  
25           Japanese and then from Japanese into English. This

1 question will arise from time to time. We feel  
2 that such a method gives for a very imperfect trans-  
3 lation, and if that is the case we ask the Tribunal  
4 to rectify it so that the Chinese will be interpreted  
5 directly into English, instead of going from Chinese  
6 to Japanese and then to English.

7 COLONEL MORROW: That is not the case here,  
8 if the Court please. Did the Court make a ruling  
9 on that matter?

10 THE PRESIDENT: I want to know what is being  
11 done, Colonel. Can you tell me?

12 COLONEL MORROW: I don't know, sir, whether  
13 they are translating directly into Japanese or  
14 English. I understand what he refers to is the  
15 situation now and not the affidavits themselves,  
16 or the statements. They have been translated cor-  
17 rectly from Chinese to English or vice versa.

18 LANGUAGE SECTION CHIEF: May it please the  
19 Tribunal, I think I can give some light on this.  
20 As it is at present, the English is being inter-  
21 preted into Japanese and the Japanese is being in-  
22 terpreted into Chinese, and the witness' answer  
23 is being translated from Chinese into Japanese and  
24 into English. We have one Chinese monitor, who  
25 monitors the Chinese-Japanese translation, and we

1 have one Japanese-English monitor, who supervises  
2 the Japanese-English.

3 THE PRESIDENT: That appears to be in order.  
4 We understand that substantially the position is  
5 this: That the Chinese is being translated into  
6 English directly from the Chinese and not through  
7 the Japanese.

8 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, that  
9 does not appear to be the case.

10 LANGUAGE SECTION CHIEF: May I clarify that  
11 point? The Chinese into Japanese, then Japanese  
12 into English. We do not have any one who speaks  
13 Chinese and English. We only have a Japanese-English  
14 interpreter and a Chinese-Japanese interpreter. No  
15 Chinese-English interpreter.

16 CAPTAIN BROOKS: If the Court please, I  
17 would like to enter an objection to proceeding out of  
18 turn on this witness until proper interpretation is  
19 provided. The transfer of the thought from Chinese  
20 to Japanese and then from Japanese to English, when  
21 the characters and ideologies are purely in the  
22 translator's hands, a double translation like that  
23 endangers a lot of time. The thoughts and expressions  
24 of the man's ideas as put before the Court involves  
25 a legal precept, because the play on the words and

CHING

DIRECT

1 ideas can mean various things. I think for a matter  
2 of expediency and fairness in the trial, all of those  
3 intervening factors that can be cut out should be  
4 done if possible. I believe it is possible to get  
5 proper translators.  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



CHING

DIRECT

W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

1 THE PRESIDENT: The Court is fully aware of  
2 all the matters stressed by Mr. Brooks and is keeping  
3 them in mind, and for these reasons the Court thinks  
4 the translation should be from Chinese into English  
5 direct if we have the translators to it. We think  
6 there must be translators in Tokyo today who can do  
7 this. We think if you made an effort to get them you  
8 would succeed.

9 JUDGE HSIANG: This problem was considered  
10 by the prosecution. Of course, the matter is to be  
11 decided by the Court. At first we were told that the mem-  
12 bers of the prosecution, Chinese members of the  
13 prosecution, perhaps would not be good parties to  
14 translate for the witness produced by the prosecution.  
15 That was why Chinese members, Chinese assistants, on  
16 the prosecution were not asked to translate. We did  
17 not offer that service.

18 Of course, this matter was for the Court to  
19 decide. If the Court thinks that the members, assist-  
20 ants, on the prosecution could do the translation  
21 work, that is different. So, in the absence of other  
22 members who could do the Chinese translation, this  
23 arrangement was made, I understand.

24 THE PRESIDENT: It will never do to have  
25 prosecution translators except perhaps in some great

CHING

DIRECT

1 extremity which I do not contemplate.

2 COLONEL MORROW: Well, if the Court please,  
3 we have been asking merely preliminary questions here.  
4 We have monitors whose sworn duty it is to accurately  
5 criticize what proceeds. And I am requesting, if the  
6 Court please, or asking that we be allowed to read  
7 these affidavits, at all events, because this has been  
8 done as to the affidavits; namely, a translation  
9 direct from Chinese to English. So far the transla-  
10 tions have been merely of preliminary questions.

11 THE PRESIDENT: If the difficulty is great  
12 now, it is going to be insuperable when you reach the  
13 stage of cross-examination. So you had better en-  
14 deavor to get a Chinese who can translate from Chinese  
15 into English, or an Englishman, or somebody.

16 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, we  
17 have several young men here from China who can do  
18 this job. It may be that there is the possible dis-  
19 ability that they have been from the prosecution, but  
20 we have a monitor and if there is no objection on the  
21 part of defense, we might go forward with the affi-  
22 davits and when the time comes have these gentlemen do  
23 the translating.

24 I understand that Judge Mei has an assistant  
25 here, if the Court please, that may be used.

CHING

DIRECT

1 THE PRESIDENT: I think you should get a man  
2 from the Chinese Mission.

3 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I under-  
4 stand that the translators here were chosen by the  
5 Court. That was not a function of the prosecution, and  
6 we are in the situation of having the criticism on the  
7 part of the defense of the facilities offered by the  
8 Court for conducting this trial.

9 THE PRESIDENT: The Court made appointments as  
10 necessity arose from time to time. You have not advised  
11 that this difficulty was going to arise, and we could  
12 not know except from you. But we do not want recrim-  
13 inations. We want this matter straightened out at  
14 once.

15 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, the  
16 prosecution notified the Secretary of the Court about  
17 this situation several weeks ago that we expected  
18 Chinese to be introduced as witnesses and asked about  
19 the translation and understood it was to be furnished.  
20 We had no way of anticipating this problem.

21 THE PRESIDENT: I understand that Justice Mei's  
22 secretary, who would be in an impartial position,  
23 would be able to make the necessary translations if  
24 there is no objection from the defense.

25 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, I have

CHING

DIRECT

1 heard no objection voiced from any defense counsel,  
 2 and there does not appear to be any objection. One  
 3 defense counsel did suggest that perhaps we should  
 4 reserve the right to a monitor. Personally I would not  
 5 insist on that, but I am expressing the view of the  
 6 other counsel as they have a right to be expressed. We  
 7 think that that would be a convenient temporary arrange-  
 8 ment until proper arrangement can be made to relieve  
 9 the assistant, if he would be kind enough to assist us.

10 THE PRESIDENT: Yes. Justice Mei's secretary,  
 11 Mr. Fang, is prepared to act and will now be sworn in  
 12 as interpreter. This is a temporary arrangement only,  
 13 of course, and we must take steps immediately to have  
 14 translators provided.

15 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The interpreter will  
 16 now be sworn, Mr. President.

17 (Whereupon, Mr. W.F.S. Fang was sworn as  
 18 Chinese-English and English-Chinese interpreter.)

19 THE PRESIDENT: You must begin again, Colonel  
 20 Morrow.

21 COLONEL MORROW: I suggest, if the Court please,  
 22 that I be allowed to proceed where we stopped, and if  
 23 there is any question about these preliminary questions--

24 THE PRESIDENT: I said you must begin again.

25 COLONEL MORROW: Begin again?

CHING

DIRECT

1 BY COLONEL MORROW (Continuing):

2 Q I will ask the witness to look over the two  
3 statements which have been presented to him and state  
4 whether or not those are and constitute part of his  
5 sworn testimony in this case?

6 A I have read this over and they were my state-  
7 ments.

8 Q Are those statements true and correct?

9 A Yes, they are.

10 Q I also desire to present to the witness exhib-  
11 its No. 2211 and 2212 and ask if he can identify the  
12 same and what they are?

13 A This is a bridge between Lukuochiao. Here is  
14 a railroad bridge which is Pinj-Han Railroad Bridge  
15 across the Yunting River. The second one is a bird's-  
16 eye view of Lukuochiao.

17 THE PRESIDENT: Those exhibits will be ten-  
18 dered? They are tendered for identification so far.  
19 Now they are finally tendered, are they?

20 COLONEL MORROW: I should have said documents  
21 instead of exhibits, if the Court please.

22 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document No. 2211 will  
23 be exhibit No. 200. Document No. 2212 will be exhibit  
24 No. 201.

25 (Whereupon, the documents above

CHING

DIRECT

1 referred to were marked prosecution's exhibits  
2 Nos. 200 and 201 for identification.)

3 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted.

4 (Whereupon, prosecution's exhibits  
5 Nos. 200 and 201 were received in evidence.)

6 COLONEL MORROW: Unless there is objection,  
7 if your Honor please, I want to read these documents  
8 or exhibits commencing with document No. 2340 which  
9 are the testimony of the witness.

10 MR. BROOKS: If the Tribunal please, I do not  
11 believe the prosecution has shown any tie-up between  
12 the English translation here and the Japanese or Chi-  
13 nese, whichever it is, that was handed to the witness.  
14 It does not show that that has been checked in any way,  
15 that it is proper. At least we have not seen it.

16 The prosecutor hands me a certificate here  
17 by someone stating that this has been translated by  
18 him to the best of his ability and knowledge, and I do  
19 not know whether that will be considered as sufficient  
20 or not. The man evidently was not sworn in this Court.  
21 I do not know his name. I think it is Liu. I think  
22 there should be a further showing that this is accurate,  
23 and we should have it through the witness that it is  
24 accurate.

25 THE PRESIDENT: Unless the defense is prepared

CHING

DIRECT

1 to accept the certificate you must call the person  
2 responsible for the translation from the English to  
3 the Chinese.

4 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, the  
5 gentleman who did the translating is here. He has the  
6 certificate in his hands. And it seems to me we have  
7 made prima facie proof here that the translation is  
8 correct. If the Court desires him sworn he may be  
9 sworn as a preliminary witness here.

10 THE PRESIDENT: The Court has no particular  
11 desires except to do the right thing. It may be the  
12 defense will accept that certificate.

13 COLONEL MORROW: Unless the defense indicates  
14 a desire to waive their objection, I will ask this wit-  
15 ness be sworn.

16 THE PRESIDENT: It might save time to swear  
17 him.

18 MR. BROOKS: If the Tribunal please, although  
19 this man is a part of the prosecution's staff, I think  
20 that defense will be satisfied if the corrections can  
21 be made at a later time. But we will have to have made  
22 available to us in some way some kind of a Chinese-  
23 English translator that could check this for accuracy,  
24 and if we can make corrections at a later time we will  
25 be willing to waive the aforementioned certificate.

CHING

DIRECT

1 I had not seen this certificate; I did not know what  
2 it was.

3 THE PRESIDENT: We refer the defense to the  
4 Language Section for any help they need. In the mean-  
5 time we will make any necessary appointments of Chi-  
6 nese translators.

7 Proceed, Colonel Morrow.

8 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please--

9 THE PRESIDENT: Better tender that certificate.

10 COLONEL MORROW: Very well. I will submit  
11 this certificate to the Clerk.

12 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted.

13 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I desire  
14 to read now exhibit 199, which was document 2340.  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



CHING

DIRECT

1 "FACTS OF JAPANESE AGGRESSION  
2 IN NORTH CHINA

3 "(I) NORTHERN CHAHAR INCIDENT

4 "In June 1935, two Japanese army officers  
5 and two Japanese soldiers came from Doran by motor car  
6 and passed through Chang Pei District en route to  
7 Kalgan. When they arrived at the north gate of the  
8 Chang Pei District, they did not submit themselves to  
9 the inspection of the guards, nor did they possess  
10 entry permits. (Regulation requires that Japanese  
11 entering the Province of Chahar should secure in ad-  
12 vance through the Japanese Consul at Kalgan entry  
13 permits from the Chahar Provincial Government.)  
14 Under these circumstances, the commanding officer of  
15 the guards at the north gate of the Chang Pei Dis-  
16 trict took these four men to the Headquarters of  
17 General CHAO Tang-yu, Commander of the 132nd Division,  
18 inside the city of Chang Pei. Commander CHAO asked  
19 by telephone for instructions from General SUNG  
20 Che-yuan, Commander of the 29th Army, at Kalgan, who  
21 permitted these Japanese to proceed to Kalgan through  
22 Chang Pei, stressing, however, that this should not  
23 be taken as a precedent and that hereafter those de-  
24 siring to enter the Province must have entry permits  
25 with them as prescribed by regulations. These four

CHING

DIRECT

1 Japanese went on to Kalgan, and further proceeded to  
2 Peiping.

3 "After the departure of the said Japanese,  
4 HASHIMOTO, the Japanese Consul at Kalgan, suddenly  
5 protested, alleging that while the guards demanded  
6 to search these Japanese officers and men at the  
7 north gate of the Chang Pei District they aimed their  
8 rifles at them, and that they were detained for four  
9 or five hours after arriving at the Headquarters of  
10 the Division, and that such constituted insults to  
11 the Japanese army men. He demanded the punishment  
12 of responsible officers and apology from the Chinese  
13 authorities. He also demanded assurance against  
14 recurrence of similar nature. General SUNG ordered  
15 me to negotiate in the capacity of the Deputy Com-  
16 mander of the 29th Army. After several talks,  
17 HASHIMOTO suddenly announced that the situation of  
18 the incident became grave and it was beyond the power  
19 of the Consul to settle it. The matter was referred  
20 to the Headquarters of the Japanese Garrison Forces  
21 in Tientsin. Major General DOHIHARA was the repre-  
22 sentative of the Garrison Forces. Thereupon, I went  
23 to Peiping and DOHIHARA also arrived at Peiping,  
24 where we proceeded with our negotiations.  
25

CHING

DIRECT

1 "The results of the negotiations were  
2 roughly as follows:

3 "(a) The Regiment Commander who was in  
4 charge of the garrison at the said gate should be  
5 dismissed and punished.

6 "(b) The Judge Advocate of the Headquart-  
7 ers of the 132nd Division who detained these Japanese  
8 officers should be dismissed and punished.

9 "(c) The units of the 29th army should be  
10 withdrawn from Paochang, Kangpao, Shangtu, Kuyuan and  
11 Huateh (Chia-pu-shih), these being Districts north of  
12 Chang Pei. The maintenance of peace and order there  
13 should be entrusted to the Peace Preservation Corps.

14 "(d) Chinese should henceforth refrain from  
15 migrating to and settling in the northern part of the  
16 Chahar Province.

17 "(e) Activities of the Kuomintang Party  
18 should be withdrawn from the Chahar Province.

19 "(f) Anti-Japanese institutions and anti-  
20 Japanese acts in the Chahar Province should be  
21 banned.

22 "The proceedings and the results of the said  
23 negotiations were telegraphically reported to the  
24 Central Government by General SUNG and myself asking  
25 for the Government's necessary approval. The Chinese

CHING

DIRECT

1 Government, in seeking for peace, did not refrain  
2 from making compromises one after another, yet the  
3 progress of the aggressions by Japanese militarists  
4 never ceased. During the said negotiations, although  
5 TAKAHASHI, Wataru, Military Attache of the Japanese  
6 Embassy in China, also participated, it was DOHIHARA,  
7 Kenji, who actually controlled the whole thing.

8 "(II) INDUCEMENT AND THREAT BOTH

9 PRIOR TO AND AFTER THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE  
10 HOPEI-CHAHAR POLITICAL COUNCIL

11 "When General SUNG Che-yuan was appointed  
12 as the Garrison Commander of the Peiping and Tientsin  
13 Area in September 1935, the Japanese sent DOHIHARA to  
14 Peiping many times to instigate attempting to form a  
15 North China Autonomous Government, to estrange the  
16 local government from the central government.

17 "The inducement tactics were:

18 "(a) To install General SUNG Che-Yuan as  
19 the leader of the North China Autonomous Government.

20 "(b) Japanese would extend every possible  
21 aid concerning military and economic affairs in North  
22 China.

23 "This was repeatedly expressed by DOHIHARA  
24 to Mr. SHIAO Cheng-Ying, ex-Mayor of Tientsin, but  
25 was refused on all occasions by the Chinese side.

C'ING

DIRECT

1 Later, MATSUMURO, Koryo, the Chief of the Japanese  
 2 Special Service Board in Peiping, and TAKAHASHI,  
 3 Wataru, the Military Attache of the Japanese Embassy  
 4 continued to make such demands from time to time.  
 5 They failed altogether. The Central Government  
 6 appointed General SUNG Che-yuan as the Chairman of  
 7 the Hopei-Chahar Political Council, to be in charge  
 8 of military and political affairs in Hopei and Chahar  
 9 Provinces and in Peiping and Tientsin. General SUNG's  
 10 measures in military and political affairs all con-  
 11 formed to the wishes of the Central Government, such  
 12 as the election for the people's Congress, and the  
 13 concentrated military training of college students,  
 14 all to the disfavor of the Japanese. The Japanese  
 15 then realized that their inducement tactics had failed.

16 "So the Japanese changed their inducement  
 17 tactics into threatening actions, which were as fol-  
 18 lows:

19 "(a) Political

20 1. According to the Japanese demand  
 21 General SUNG should announce by circular telegrams the  
 22 establishment of a North China Autonomous Government.

23 2. The Central Government's personnel  
 24 in charge of publicity still remaining in North China  
 25 should be withdrawn.

CHING

DIRECT

1 3. Public opinion in Peiping and  
2 Tientsin should be controlled and opposition to auto-  
3 nomy should not be permitted.

4 (The above three demands were directly  
5 presented by DOHIHARA and TAKAHASHI, Wataru, to Mr.  
6 SHIAO Cheng-ying)

7 "(b) Economic

8 1. A railway should be constructed  
9 between Tientsin and Shih-chia-chuan.

10 2. The custom tariffs at the Tientsin  
11 Maritime Customs should be so revised as to increase  
12 the tariff of European and American commodities, and  
13 to decrease that of Japanese commodities.

14 (The above two items were demanded by  
15 DOHIHARA and MATSUI, the Chief of the Japanese  
16 Special Service Board in Peiping, through Mr. Chen  
17 Cho-sung, the Director of the Peiping and Liaoning  
18 Railway, to General SUNG and myself. These demands  
19 were refused by us.)

20 "(c) Military

21 In September 1936, the Fengtai Inci-  
22 dent occurred. A company of Japanese soldiers car-  
23 ried out maneuvers in Fengtai. They passed through  
24 the garrison line of the Chinese Army. Clash ensued  
25 when our patrols attempted to halt them. Although

CHING

DIRECT

1 it was immediately settled, the Japanese use this as  
2 a pretext for reinforcement of their troops which  
3 occupied Fengtai. It was a battalion, under the com-  
4 mand of Major ICHINOI, Kiyonao.

5 "Besides, there was another instance. MATSUI,  
6 Iwane, in the Autumn of 1935, came to Peiping. He  
7 was a General in retirement at that time, and ad-  
8 vocated Greater Asiaism. He hoped to establish a  
9 branch of the Greater Asia Association in Peiping.  
10 Through the introduction of Mr. CHEN Cho-sung, Di-  
11 rector of the Peiping and Liaoning Railway, he met  
12 General SUNG and myself. Both of us expressed our  
13 disfavor. MATSUI, in his conversation with me,  
14 advocated that Asia should be the Asia of the Asiatics,  
15 and that European and American influences should be  
16 expelled. I smiled and replied, saying that I was  
17 afraid that what he meant by Asia of the Asiatics was  
18 actually the Asia of the Japanese. Unless there were  
19 real equality and reciprocity, nothing could be dis-  
20 cussed."

21 (Signed) "CHING Teh-chun

22 "Formerly, Deputy Commander of the 29th  
23 Army,

24 "At present, Vice-Minister, Ministry  
25 of National Defense.

"Dated: 10 June 1946, at Nanking."

CHING

DIRECT

1 And I have also an affidavit here -- a  
2 statement, if the Court please -- which is No.  
3 118, entitled -- exhibit 198, not 118, if the  
4 Court please:

5 "A FACTUAL ACCOUNT OF JULY 7th INCIDENT.  
6 By General Ching Teh Chun.

7 "(Formerly Mayor of Peiping and con-  
8 currently Vice-Commander of the 29th Army. At  
9 present, Vice-Minister of Military Operations)

10 "1. PROLOGUE

11 "A. The Political and Military Conditions in  
12 Hopei and Chahar Provinces Prior to the War of  
13 Resistance.

14 "1. Political -- Before the Incident of  
15 July 7th, the Hopei-Chahar Political Council was  
16 the responsible institution in charge of political  
17 affairs in Hopei and Chahar Provinces. General  
18 Sun Che-Yuan was the Chairman of the said Council,  
19 being appointed by the National Government. The  
20 Council had jurisdiction over Hopei and Chahar  
21 Provinces and Peiping and Tientsin Municipalities.  
22 General Feng Chi-An and General Liu Ju-Ming were  
23 the Governor of Hopei Province and Chahar Province  
24 respectively. I, myself, was then Mayor of  
25 Peiping, while General Chang Chi-Chung, who later



1 fell gallantly for the country as Commander-in-  
2 Chief, was then Mayor of Tientsin.

3 "Since their costless invasion of the  
4 Chinese North-Eastern three Provinces, followed  
5 by the invasion of the Jehol Province, and the  
6 Battle of the Great Wall, the Chinese aggressors  
7 considered all these Provinces in North China as  
8 something that could be very easily taken over.  
9 Peiping and Tientsin, therefore, became the front  
10 line of national defense. However, all the poli-  
11 cies of the local authorities in Hopei, Chahar,  
12 Peiping and Tientsin were formulated and carried  
13 out in conformity with instructions and laws pro-  
14 claimed by the National Government. For example,  
15 the election of representatives of the People's  
16 Congress, the concentrated military training of  
17 all college students, were considered by the Japan-  
18 ese aggressors as measures inconsistent with the  
19 status of special area. Repeatedly, Japanese  
20 opened negotiations and interfered with such ad-  
21 ministration, but all the inducements and threats  
22 failed. Finally they resorted to the military  
23 aggression on July 7th, 1937.

24 "2. Military -- In North China, the 29th  
25 Army was the main force, which had its garrisons

1 all over Hopei, Chahar, Peiping and Tientsin. At  
 2 the time of the Incident, the 37th Division under  
 3 the command of General Feng Chi-An was stationed  
 4 in the suburbs of Peiping, namely, Nan-Yuan, Peip-  
 5 Yuan, Si-Yuan, Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge),  
 6 Chan-Sin-Tien, and Paoting. The 38th Division  
 7 under the command of General Chang Chi-Chung was  
 8 stationed at Tientsin, Young-Chung, Langfang,  
 9 Chuan-Liak, Chen, Taku, Tangku, and along the  
 10 Tientsin-Pukow Railway such as Na-Chan and Tsang-  
 11 chow. The 143rd Division under the command of  
 12 General Liu-Ju-Ming was stationed in the Chahar  
 13 Province, at Kalgan, Chang-Pei, Chai-Kuo-Pao,  
 14 Yeng-Ching, Nankow, etc. The 132nd Division  
 15 under the command of General Chao-Teng-Yu was  
 16 spread over the southern part of Hopei Province,  
 17 namely, Ta-Ming, Ho-Chien, Hsien-Hsien, Jen-Chiu,  
 18 etc.

19 "Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge), where  
 20 the Incident of July 7th broke out, is situated  
 21 about 20 Li southwest to the Chang-Yi Gate of  
 22 Peiping City. The District Government of the  
 23 Wan-Ping Hsien was at the east of the bridge.  
 24 The city of Wan-Ping was not large. Both inside  
 25 and outside of the city of Wan-Ping were guarded

CHING

-DIRECT

1 by troops of the 37th Division. This place, being  
2 on the main communication line west of Peiping,  
3 was strategically very important. Japanese forces,  
4 stationed at Fengtai, had repeatedly demanded the  
5 withdrawal of the Chinese garrison from this place,  
6 and also from Chan-Sin-Tien. All these demands  
7 were refused by our side in unmistakable terms.  
8 In the winter of 1936, Japanese intended to rein-  
9 force their garrison force, and planned to build  
10 barracks and airfield in the area between Fengtai  
11 and Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge), in order to  
12 control completely North China. In spite of their  
13 efforts in repeated negotiations, we refused them  
14 in severe wordings. Thus frustrated, Japanese  
15 changed their tactics. They attempted to lay  
16 their hands on the local inhabitants by inducing  
17 and threatening them to lease or sell the lands  
18 voluntarily to the Japanese. But, according to  
19 the report of Commissioner Wang Leng-Chai, who  
20 governed that area, the local residents had no  
21 intentions to lease or to sell the lands belonging  
22 to them. The residents made sworn statements to  
23 that effect and authenticated these statements  
24 with their finger prints. One day, HASHIMOTO,  
25 the Chief of Staff of the Japanese Garrison Forces

CHING

DIRECT

1 in North China, Wachi, and some other Japanese  
2 officers called on me and again requested to buy  
3 these lands. They argued that the local inhabi-  
4 tants desired to lease or sell voluntarily, yet  
5 it could not be realized, apparently due to the  
6 opposition of the Government in North China. My  
7 reply was that, no right of land in any country  
8 could be freely leased or sold to foreigners. If  
9 we asked for a lease or purchase of land in the  
10 vicinity of Tokyo, could that be allowed by your  
11 Government. In the last minimum, landed proper-  
12 ties owned by private persons who enjoy ownership  
13 of such properties could not be disposed of by the  
14 Government at will. Since you asserted that the  
15 residents were willing to sell their lands, what  
16 was the proof of this assertion. HASHIMOTO coun-  
17 tered by demanding us to produce proof of the un-  
18 willingness to lease or sell their lands on the  
19 part of the residents. Upon this I produced the  
20 sworn statements of the residents authenticated  
21 with their finger prints and forwarded to me by  
22 Commissioner Wang, to the effect that they would  
23 not sell any land. HASHIMOTO and other Japanese  
24 officers, upon seeing these documents, could not  
25 say anything. This episode which brought dis-

CHING

DIRECT

1 grace and anger to them must have embittered them.  
2 From that time on, under the pretext of maneuvers  
3 they hoped to invade and occupy Wan-Ping City by  
4 catching us unprepared. This was the immediate  
5 cause leading to the outbreak of the Incident.

6 "B. Stages of Japanese Aggressions

7 "1. Alienation and Estrangement -- The Japa-  
8 nese attempted to alienate and estrange the local  
9 authorities in North China from the Central Govern-  
10 ment by inducements and by threat hoping thereby to  
11 disintegrate and destroy separate areas one after  
12 another. The numerous attempts they made could  
13 be summed up as inducements by bribery and threat  
14 by force. All these attempts, however, were met  
15 with flat refusal from the local authorities.  
16 Their conspiracy could by no means be realized.  
17 This was the first stage of enemy aggression in  
18 North China, a period running roughly from the  
19 Autumn 1935 to the Summer 1936."

20 THE PRESIDENT: This is a convenient  
21 break, Colonel Morrow. We will adjourn now for  
22 fifteen minutes.

23 (Whereupon, at 1045, a recess  
24 was taken until 1100, after which the pro-  
25 ceedings were resumed as follows).

CHING

DIRECT

W  
O  
l  
f  
&  
S  
F  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now  
2 resumed.

3 MR. McMANUS: If your Honor please, I would  
4 like to interpose an objection to the continuance of  
5 the reading of this document. It obviously contains  
6 the theories and opinions of the witness here, and  
7 does not confine itself to the statement of facts.

8 THE PRESIDENT: It certainly should not be  
9 in that form, but I am afraid we will have to receive  
10 it for what probative value it has, Mr. McManus.

11 COLONEL MORROW: May I proceed, if the Court  
12 please?

13 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

14 COLONEL MORROW: (Reading continued) "Eco-  
15 nomic Monopoly--The Japanese hoped to attack economic  
16 monopoly under the mask of friendship and fraterniza-  
17 tion and the watchword, equality and reciprocity.  
18 The concrete demands made by them were: a. To con-  
19 struct a Tsang-Shih Railway (between Tsangchow and  
20 Shih-Chia-Chwang, both in southern Hopei), b. To de-  
21 velop the Lung-Yen Iron Mines (in Chahar Province),  
22 and c. To revise Maritime Custom Tariffs at Tientsin,  
23 in such a way as to raise tariffs on European and  
24 American commodities, and to lower tariffs on Japanese  
25 commodities.

CHING

DIRECT

1 "All these demands, the acceptance of which  
2 would impair the sovereignty of China, were flatly  
3 refused. This was the second stage of Japanese ag-  
4 gression in north China. The period covered ran  
5 roughly from the Summer 1936 to the Spring 1937.

6 "Threat by Armed Forces--After realizing  
7 that alienation, estrangement, and attempts to attain  
8 economic monopoly had all failed, the Japanese finally  
9 decided upon threat by armed force. They hoped to  
10 reach their goal without fighting. At the beginning  
11 of the Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge Incident), Japan-  
12 ese had no anticipation other than Chinese submission  
13 after a blow dealt to the Chinese by their compara-  
14 tively superior forces. They anticipated that Hopei,  
15 Shansi, Shantung, Chahar, and Dueiyuen Provinces  
16 could thus be turned into a region of special status,  
17 thus realizing the second step in the plan of General  
18 TANAKA for the conquest of the whole world. They  
19 never thought that, at the call of our supreme leader,  
20 all Chinese would rise and take up the War of Resis-  
21 tance on all fronts. As to the drawn-out War of Re-  
22 sistance over long, long period, and the fact that we  
23 never wavered all the way through, was even more un-  
24 expected by the enemy.  
25

CHING

DIRECT

## 1 II. FACTUAL ACCOUNT OF THE INCIDENT

2 "At 0010, in the evening of July 7th, 1937,  
3 I received a report from the Hopei-Chahar Foreign Af-  
4 fairs Commission, which stated that the said commission  
5 had received a telephone call from MATSUI, the Chief of  
6 the Japanese Special Service Board, saying: 'One com-  
7 pany of Japanese troops, in night maneuver in the vic-  
8 nity of Lukouchiao (Marco Polo Bridge) just a while  
9 ago, seemed to have heard a few gun shots fired by  
10 soldiers of the 37th Division of the 29th Army station-  
11 ed in the city of Wan-Ping. The gun shots brought  
12 some confusion of the troops in maneuver. As a result  
13 of the roll call, one Japanese soldier was found to  
14 be missing. Japanese troops demanded to enter and  
15 search the city of Wan-Ping this very evening.' The  
16 said commission asked instructions by telephone as to  
17 how to deal with the situation. I immediately replied  
18 that Japanese troops, maneuvering in Chinese territory  
19 at their own will, were in violation of international  
20 law. Neither had they notified us in advance, nor  
21 had they obtained our permission. The Chinese Govern-  
22 ment has no responsibility whatsoever for the alleged  
23 missing soldier. Even if it is true that a soldier  
24 was really missing, we shall order the Chinese troops  
25



CHING

DIRECT

1 stationed at Lukouchiao (Marco Polo Bridge) to con-  
2 duct a search for the Japanese soldier on our own  
3 behalf in cooperation with local police forces. My  
4 instructions were transmitted to the Japanese by the  
5 Hopei-Chahar Foreign Affairs Commission. Soon there-  
6 after, the said commission again telephoned me and  
7 reported that after transmission of the reply, both  
8 the Japanese Special Service Board and the Japanese  
9 troops were not satisfied. The Japanese insisted  
10 on conducting a search in the city by force. If re-  
11 fused, they decided to encircle the walled city. I  
12 again immediately replied that in case of such un-  
13 reasonableness on the part of Japanese, so violent  
14 and barbarious we, for the sake of self-defense,  
15 could only take the course of resolute resistance.  
16 Then I called on Regiment Commander Chi Sin-Wen over  
17 the telephone. At that time, one battalion of the  
18 regiment under his command was in charge of garrison  
19 duties at Lukuochiao, while other two battalions and  
20 his Regiment Headquarters were at Chan-Sin-Tien. I  
21 asked Commander Chi whether his regiment had maneuver-  
22 ed tonight. Chi replied in the negative. I asked  
23 him whether there were any Japanese troops maneuver-  
24 ing in the vicinity of Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge).  
25 Chi replied that he had received no such information,

CHING

DIRECT

1 but that he would immediately send out his men to  
2 investigate. Thereupon, I informed him the negotia-  
3 tions between the Japanese and us, and ordered him  
4 to send at once able men to proceed toward the direc-  
5 tion of Fengtai, to detect possible Japanese troop  
6 movements. On the other hand, I ordered by telephone  
7 Commissioner Wang Lun-Chai, who was concurrently the  
8 Magistrate of Wan-Ping Hsien, to investigate and to  
9 report on the maneuvering of Japanese troops and whether  
10 any Japanese soldier was missing. Soon, I received a  
11 telephone call from Commander Chi, who reported that,  
12 according to the report of the officer dispatched to-  
13 wards the direction of Fengtai, about a battalion of  
14 Japanese troops with six pieces of artillery, was now  
15 advancing from Fengtai to Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge)  
16 and whether there was any reinforcements following  
17 this column had to await further detection. There-  
18 upon, as the Vice-Commander of the 29th Army, I im-  
19 mediately ordered Regiment Commander Chi to well  
20 guard the city of Wan-Ping, that not a single Japanese  
21 soldier was to be allowed to come in, that not a single  
22 inch of territory was to be allowed to lose, that in  
23 virtue of our responsibility as soldiers, to guard  
24 our territory, the Wan-Ping city would be, in case  
25

CHING

DIRECT

1 of necessity, the most precious and glorious grave-  
2 yard of our ranks and files, that we should share  
3 the same fate with the city. If they did not open  
4 fire first, we should not first open fire upon them.  
5 If they should first open fire, we were sure to deal  
6 them fatal blows. After having my order, Chi sent  
7 another battalion to enforce the guard at Lukouchiao  
8 (Marco Polo Bridge), and he himself led the battalion  
9 there to reinforce the defense. At the same time,  
10 Commissioner Wang Lun-Chai came to Peiping to report  
11 in person the factual result of his investigation.  
12 So, I sent Commissioner Wang, together with Wei Tsung-  
13 Han, Commissioner of Foreign Affairs of Hopei-Chahar  
14 Provinces, Lin Ken-Yu, also a member under Commission-  
15 er Wei, and Chou Jun-Ye, Chief of Communication Sec-  
16 tion, of the Pacification Headquarters, to negotiate  
17 with MATSUI. At 0500 in the morning, successive re-  
18 ports informed me that Japanese troops had come to  
19 the edge of the city and demanded the entry of the  
20 city by force, that we had to prepare for the defense  
21 on the one hand and to try to stop their entry by  
22 negotiation on the other. The Japanese, realizing  
23 by that time that there was no hope for them to take  
24 the city of Wan-Ping without fighting, finally encir-  
25 cled it on three sides. Our forces put up defense

CHING

DIRECT

1 works on the walls. Around 0600, enemy machine gun  
2 fire began to attack the city, and enemy forces came  
3 towards it. This was the very beginning of the Sino-  
4 Japanese war, but the responsibility of the Incident  
5 was also definitely fixed (upon Japan).

6 "Hostilities on the 8th and 9th of July  
7 were heavy, and Japanese suffered many casualties.  
8 The railway bridge leading to Chan-Sin-Tien was oc-  
9 cupied by Japanese in the morning of the 8th, and on  
10 the same night, two companies of Chinese troops,  
11 each soldier equipped with a pistol, a sword, and  
12 four hand grenades, moved up stealthily. They sud-  
13 denly attacked, when they approached the bridge head.  
14 The enemy, about a company strong, was surprised and  
15 most of them were killed. Japanese, seeing that  
16 they were suffering setbacks, sent MATSUI and others  
17 to me on the following day, and asked for negotiation.  
18 I had foreseen their intention before they came, so  
19 I refused them. Soon thereafter, they came again  
20 and explained the intention of truce, adding that  
21 the missing soldier had already been found, so that  
22 a peaceful settlement would be feasible. We began  
23 to discuss and, as a result, decided on three con-  
24 ditions: (a) All military actions should cease on  
25 both sides, (b) Troops of both sides should return

CHING

DIRECT

1 to their original positions, and (c) the 37th  
2 Division which entertains more hostile feelings  
3 against Japan, should be replaced by some other unit  
4 of the 29th Army for the defense of Wan-Ping City.  
5 An understanding was also reached that both sides  
6 should refrain from developing henceforth incidents  
7 of similar nature. Yet, these conditions were  
8 nothing but Japanese tactics to delay and thus to  
9 gain time. Utilizing this breathing space, units  
10 of the Kwantung Army were sent to Peiping and  
11 Tientsin area for attack. We detected their con-  
12 spiracy, and had to order hastily the Division under  
13 the command of General Chao stationed in Ta-ming and  
14 Ho-Chien in southern Hopei to proceed to Peiping.  
15 At that time, General Sung Che-Yuan was on leave of  
16 absence in his home town in Shantung. After my re-  
17 peated telegrams asking for his return, he arrived  
18 in Peiping on the 12th of July. We discussed strate-  
19 gies and policies. War again broke out on the 14th,  
20 and more intensified than before. Every day, enemy  
21 shelled the Wan-Ping city by artillery, to cover the  
22 advance of their infantry, but were all repulsed by  
23 our army. On the 25th of July, enemy airplane, in  
24 reconnaissance over the Peiping-Taming highways dis-  
25 covered that our troops of large numbers were advancing

CHING

DIRECT

1 northward, and the spearhead had already arrived at  
2 Nanyuan. On the 26th of July, Japanese handed us  
3 an ultimatum to the effect that the 37th Division be  
4 withdrawn from the Peiping area within 24 hours,  
5 failing which they would attack us by large forces.  
6 To defend ourselves, we attacked immediately on the  
7 27th enemy troops at Fengtai and in the vicinity of  
8 Lukuochiao (Marco Polo Bridge). In the same evening,  
9 we killed quite a number of Japanese at Fentai, re-  
10 captured the west flank and the south flank of  
11 Fēngtai, and pressed on near the enemy headquarters  
12 there. KATSUKI, Seiji, the Japanese Commander in  
13 Chief, ordered Japanese reinforcements from Tungchow  
14 and Tientsin, with strong equipment and more than 30  
15 airplanes, to make an onslaught. In the early morn-  
16 ing of the 28th, the enemy with the combined forces  
17 of the land and air, fiercely attacked Nan-yuen with  
18 all their strength. Large scale hostilities developed  
19 with heavy casualties unprecedented since the out-  
20 break incident. Around 2 p.m., most regretfully,  
21 General Chao Tung-Yu, Division Commander, General  
22 Tung Ling-Kou, Vice Army Commander, were both killed  
23 in action. Casualties reached more than 5,000 in-  
24 cluding both dead and wounded among our officers  
25 and soldiers.

1 "Some time before this, repeated telegrams  
2 from our Supreme Commander (Generalissimo Chiang)  
3 ordered General Sung, Chairman of the Hopei-Chahar  
4 Political Council to proceed to Paoting (in southern  
5 Hopei) and to direct operations from there. General  
6 Sung now acted as directed by these orders. I my-  
7 self went to Paoting with him in the night of 28th.  
8 Considerable success was scored by the Chinese forces  
9 in Tientsin, who made their attacks bravely on the  
10 29th and 30th of July. Subsequently they also evacua-  
11 ted according to orders received. They fell back to  
12 the south of Tientsin along the Tientsin-Pukow Rail-  
13 way, while other troops were put up along the Peiping-  
14 Hankow Railway. In close collaboration between each  
15 other, they began to engage themselves in long-term  
16 Resistance against the enemy. This was what happen-  
17 ed during the Lukouchiao (Marco Polo Bridge) Incident  
18 and the War of Resistance thereafter.

19 "Leading Japanese officers who instigated  
20 this Incident were:

21 KATSUKI, Seiji, Commander in Chief of the  
22 Japanese Garrison Forces in  
Tientsin

23 KAWABE, Seiso, Brigadier Commander

24 MUTAGUCHI, Renyam, Regiment Commander  
25

CHING

DIRECT

1 SAKAI, Takashi, Ex Chief of Staff of the  
Japanese Garrison Forces in Tientsin

2 "But the instigator at the very beginning  
3 of Japanese aggression in north China was DOHIMARA,  
4 Kenji, the same man who instigated the Mukden Inci-  
5 dent of 18 September 1931. All these men should be  
6 held responsible for the war of aggression. As to  
7 the narcotic policy and various atrocities committed  
8 in enemy occupied areas, which according to reports  
9 from all sides, were intensified as time went on.  
10 Much to my regret I could not produce definite and  
11 strong evidences for these activities and atrocities  
12 since I had left for operations along Peiping-Hankow,  
13 Peiping-Taming, and Tientsin-Pukow Railway lines."  
14

15 (Signed) "CHING Teh-Chun  
16 Formerly Mayor of Peiping and Concurrently  
Vice-Commander of the 29th Army

17 At present, Vice-Minister, Ministry of Military  
18 Operations"  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



CHING

CROSS

1 COLONEL MORROW: I assume I may waive the  
2 reading of the certificate, in view of the testimony.  
3 That completes the affidavit, if your Honor  
4 please.

5 THE PRESIDENT: The defense may cross-  
6 examine now.

7 MR. OHTA: I am OHTA, Kinjiro, counsel for  
8 the defendant, DOHIHARA. I would like to ask a few  
9 questions to the witness, General CHING Teh-chaun.

## CROSS-EXAMINATION

11 BY MR. OHTA:

12 Q The witness stated that the two accounts  
13 had been taken by the prosecution upon oath. Were  
14 they really taken on oath?

15 A The first statement was a statement by me on  
16 the 2nd of April, which statement was a statement of  
17 conscience and factual accounts. I didn't write them  
18 under oath. The second statement was written on the  
19 10th of June. The circumstances were the same. I  
20 wrote out of my conscience and according to facts, and  
21 was not under oath.  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

G  
o  
l  
d  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 Q Then I repeat it again, it is not an  
2 affidavit, is it?

3 A This statement was firstly written and then  
4 as is proved correct, I gave my oath.

5 Q I have heard that in your country, that is,  
6 in China, there is a special formula for taking  
7 statement. Did you comply with that formula?

8 THE MONITOR: Correction? "what formula  
9 that you use."

10 A When the prosecutor asked me whether the  
11 statement I gave was true, I admitted that it was  
12 true and then I gave my oath. That is the form  
13 I adopted.

14 Q Is the witness acquainted with Mr. Chen  
15 Ko, the Mayor of Tientsin at the time of June 1935?

16 A Yes, I know.

17 Q Is the witness acquainted with Mr. Chen  
18 Chueh-shen, the President of the Peining (Peiping-  
19 Liaoning) Railway Company?

20 A Yes, I know.

21 Q Was the so-called "DOIHARA-Ching Teh-Chun  
22 agreement" made as a result through the good offices of  
23 Mr. Chen Chueh-Shen and Mr. Chen Ko?

24 A There was no so-called "Ching-DOIHARA agree-  
25 ment" in existence. With regard to the North Hopei

CHING

CROSS

1 Affair, Ching, on the order of the Central Government,  
2 discussed the matter over with DOIHARA with a view  
3 to settle this matter temporarily. At the time, Chen  
4 Ko, the Mayor of Tientsin, and Chen Chueh-shen,  
5 Director of the Peining Army Railway Administration,  
6 were the people responsible for the interpretation.

7 Q Is the so-called "North Chapel Incident" --  
8 North Chahar Incident -- the so-called "North Chahar  
9 Incident" -- are the facts concerning the North Chahar  
10 Incident like these? In July 1935 -- in June 1935,  
11 two officers and two men of the Japanese Army, when  
12 they were on their way to Kalgan via To Lun and Chang  
13 Peh Hsien riding in a motor car were fired upon by  
14 the Chinese garrison troops at the eastern gate of  
15 Chang Peh Hsien; and then they were beaten up by  
16 those Chinese guards and then they were taken,  
17 captured and detained at a military police station.  
18 Was that the cause of the Incident?

19 THE MONITOR: Correction: "Two Japanese  
20 officers and NCO's" instead of "soldiers". And  
21 another correction: "Northern gate" instead of  
22 "eastern gate" and "they were confined for four or  
23 five days."

24 A The facts are slightly different from what  
25 had occurred then. These are the facts. There were

CHING

CROSS

1 then two Japanese officers and two NCO's travelling  
2 through Chang Peh Hsien at the Chang Peh Hsien gate,  
3 the gate of the country. They were demanded to pro-  
4 duce their passports. These passports, according  
5 to the then regulations in force, would have to be  
6 presented by the Japanese Consulate with the under-  
7 standing from the Chinese authorities. At that time  
8 the guards, the guard on duty at the gate asked the  
9 Japanese to produce their passports which the Japan-  
10 ese refused. As the Japanese refused to produce their  
11 passports, the guard, in order to carry out their  
12 duties, insisted on asking them to produce the pass-  
13 port. At that time they took the posture of aiming  
14 with their rifles they had on their hands at the  
15 Japanese but they never shot it. In the course of  
16 their quarreling a platoon leader came to the scene.  
17 Then this platoon leader took this Japanese to the  
18 inside of the city gate to the headquarters of 132nd  
19 Division. As soon as they got to the Division Head-  
20 quarters' premises, the Japanese were given, were  
21 treated to a dinner and at the same time the platoon  
22 leader made a report to the authorities. As they  
23 were having their dinner there, and this report and  
24 so forth took some time of, say, three to four hours,  
25 they were never detained.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Were not those negotiations terminated  
2 amicably on the 23rd of June and confirmed by the  
3 Central Government representatives on the 27th of  
4 the same month?

5 A I cannot remember correctly the accurate  
6 date but I do remember it is around 20th of June  
7 when the settlement was brought forth. But, this  
8 settlement was a result of the concessions made  
9 by the Chinese Government with a view to secure peace.

10 Q In order to conclude those negotiations,  
11 did both the Japanese and the Chinese sides make  
12 considerable concessions in order to attain the  
13 peaceful conclusion of the treaty? Being motivated  
14 with a desire to conclude the negotiations peace-  
15 fully, the Japanese side made considerable concessions  
16 as compared with the conditions put forward by them  
17 at the very outset of the negotiations, wasn't it  
18 true?

19 THE MONITOR: Correction: "It may be  
20 that Chinese side made concessions but isn't it  
21 true that Japanese also, out of their desire for  
22 peace, softened up their initial demands and was  
23 not the agreement reached out of concession on both  
24 sides?"

25 A The question was then temporarily settled.

CHING

CROSS

1 But if you say that this was, the settlement was  
2 obtained through the repeated concessions made on  
3 the part of the Japanese, that is not true.

4 Q Was not the fact that the negotiations  
5 were concluded peacefully greatly welcomed by the  
6 Chinese side also?

7 A As I said just now, the Chinese Government,  
8 in order to secure peace, had under pains come to  
9 that settlement with the Japanese. It is not -- it  
10 was not an agreement out of the wish of the Chinese  
11 people.

12 Q In the document entitled "Facts of Japanese  
13 Aggression in North China" dated the tenth of June,  
14 1946, you stated that aggression of the Japanese  
15 military clique did not cease until then, et cetera.  
16 However, were not these negotiations conducted peace-  
17 fully with the hope to prevent the clash of the two  
18 parties?

19 A You said up to now the Japanese aggression  
20 has not been stopped. That is not the case. Up to  
21 now it is stopped but then it was not stopped. Will  
22 you please show me that paragraph?

23 (Whereupon, defense counsel brought  
24 the aforementioned document to interpreters'  
25 table.)

CHING

CROSS

- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6
- 7
- 8
- 9
- 10
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14
- 15
- 16
- 17
- 18
- 19
- 20
- 21
- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25

THE PRESIDENT: We will recess now until half past one.

(Whereupon, at 1200, a recess was taken.)

CHING

## AFTERNOON SESSION

M  
o  
r  
s  
e  
&  
A  
b  
r  
a  
m1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

The Tribunal met, pursuant to recess, at 1330, Hon. Myron C. Cramer, Major General, U. S. Army, sitting as Member from the United States of America.

MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Morrow.

COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I believe they desire to continue the cross-examination.

THE PRESIDENT: Yes. Well, unless you have something.

COLONEL MORROW: Nothing further.

MR. CUNNINGHAM: If the Court please, before we proceed with the cross-examination, if it please the Tribunal, we, without in any way casting a reflection at this time upon the ability, integrity, or other qualities or character of the Member challenged, may I present for the consideration of the Tribunal and for the record in the proceeding, a challenge for cause to show that the newly appointed Member, the Honorable Major General Myron C. Cramer, United States Army, the representative of the United States of America on the Tribunal, is not eligible to participate in the trial of this cause now pending, and



CHING

1 to state the reasons for this challenge for cause.

2 First, that there is no provision in the  
3 Charter for this additional appointment. The Charter  
4 provides: "The Tribunal shall consist of not less  
5 than six members nor more than eleven members,  
6 appointed by the Supreme Commander for the Allied  
7 Powers from the names submitted by the Signatories to  
8 the Instrument of Surrender, India, and the Common-  
9 wealth of the Philippines." In accordance with the  
10 provisions of the Charter, this Tribunal has been com-  
11 pletely constituted with the maximum of the members  
12 eligible for appointment. The Member now challenged  
13 is the twelfth appointee to this Tribunal. This  
14 appointment is expressly prohibited by the Charter.  
15 From the reading of the pertinent provisions of the  
16 Charter, the express intent is that the Tribunal will  
17 be fully constituted with a minimum of six members  
18 thereof, and the appointment of members over and  
19 above the maximum of eleven would open the door to  
20 allowing new members to sit in judgment upon the  
21 accused at any and all periods during this trial.  
22 The exercise of the authority for the appointment of  
23 members in excess of eleven could have no limits, to  
24 the end that any member or members could sit at  
25 different times in this proceeding. This would result

CHING

1 in a ridiculous situation as far as a just trial for  
2 the accused is concerned, all contrary to the intents  
3 and purposes of the Charter.

4 Next, that the addition of another member of  
5 this Tribunal, if permitted, would cause this trial  
6 to proceed clouded with a substantial doubt as to the  
7 legality, fairness, and the impartiality of this whole  
8 proceeding. That not having been present in court  
9 when a substantial part of the vital testimony was  
10 given and after other important proceedings had been  
11 completed, the appearance now of a new member will  
12 involve an appreciable risk to the substantial rights  
13 of the accused, which risk cannot be avoided by a  
14 private reading of the lengthy record, which, of itself,  
15 only amounts to a review and does not constitute the  
16 requirements of a fair and impartial trial. This  
17 contemplates hearing the witnesses, listening to the  
18 arguments of counsel, and taking part in the deliber-  
19 ations of the Tribunal of all stages of the proceeding.

20 Next, that having served as a high ranking  
21 general in the armed forces of one of the leading  
22 victorious accuser nations, impartiality is incom-  
23 patible with this relationship and his part official  
24 duties. This fact alone presents a strong basis for  
25 a challenge for cause.

1           Four. The record in this case presents no  
2 evidence that the nomination of the challenged Member  
3 of this Tribunal has been made by a signatory to the  
4 Instrument of Surrender. Under the Charter, the  
5 nomination as well as evidence of appointment is  
6 essential to this record. There is no legal authority  
7 for the nomination and appointment or for the Charter  
8 under which the appointment is proposed.

9           Five. That the accused represented by this  
10 American counsel, elects to exercise this right of  
11 challenge for the reasons heretofore urged, and, there-  
12 fore, moves that the newly designated Member of this  
13 Tribunal disqualify himself and decline to serve as  
14 a Member of this Tribunal.

15           In view of the recent resignation of the  
16 American representative on this Tribunal, Mr. Justice  
17 Higgins, and the acceptance or approval of the resig-  
18 nation by the Supreme Commander after the Court had  
19 been constituted and after it had begun hearing of the  
20 evidence and proceeded substantially with the trial of  
21 the issues involved and had completed two phases of  
22 the case and a major part of the third, it is moved  
23 that the Court declare this to be a mistrial, and  
24 that a new Tribunal be appointed under a valid Charter  
25 and in accordance therewith.

1           It is further urged that those challenges  
2 for cause be sustained by this Tribunal and we pray  
3 for such further relief as is equitable under these  
4 circumstances.

5           I feel there are perhaps some other members  
6 of the defense counsel who would like to argue upon  
7 this proposition if the Court permits.

8           I would like to have this record show that  
9 this challenge for cause is made by the American  
10 counsel for OSHIMA, Hiroshi.

11           COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, the  
12 prosecution, at any rate this section of the prosecu-  
13 tion, knew nothing about the sitting of General  
14 Cramer, knew nothing about this motion, has not seen  
15 the motion, and it is respectfully suggested that this  
16 matter be deferred until the prosecution has an  
17 opportunity to look into the motion and reply, if  
18 necessary, unless the Court decides to proceed with-  
19 out hearing from the prosecution.

20           THE PRESIDENT: We will hear all you have to  
21 say today. If you want further time, probably you will  
22 get it, but I will have to consult my colleagues about  
23 that.

24           Mr. Smith.

25           MR. SMITH: If your Honor please, on behalf

CHING

1 of Mr. HIROTA, I would like to move briefly for a mis-  
2 trial because of the substitution and the seating of  
3 an American judge. The ground is that where the  
4 Court sits as both judge and jury we think that up  
5 until this time, without exception, the practice has  
6 always been for the accused to be confronted by his  
7 judge on the trial of the facts from the start to the  
8 finish of the trial. There has been practically a  
9 month of testimony in this case. A great deal of it  
10 has been very helpful to the defense. Witness after  
11 witness has appeared on the stand who did not testify  
12 to the facts that the prosecution evidently expected,  
13 and the new judge has lost the benefit and the  
14 defendant has been deprived of the right of the  
15 American judge to see and hear the witnesses and to  
16 appraise their credibility.

17 THE PRESIDENT: Two questions arise here,  
18 Mr. Smith: First the question of the power  
19 to make the appointment, and second, the question of  
20 expediency. The first question, the question of the  
21 power, is the one which I think was dealt with by  
22 Mr. Cunningham. But you are on the second question,  
23 that of expediency. Is that so?

24 MR. SMITH: Yes, sir.  
25

W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

1 THE PRESIDENT: On the question of power, I  
2 may remind you -- it will not help, of course -- that  
3 the French representative is the second appointment  
4 to this Court by his country, so that if your conten-  
5 tion is correct, there has been a mistrial throughout.

6 MR. SMITH: If your Honor please, I have  
7 been here since the testimony began about a month ago  
8 and my recollection is that the French Justice has  
9 heard all the witnesses who have appeared.

10 Going back to your Honor's question, it is  
11 not only expediency but, as I understand it, one of  
12 the great cornerstones of the law which cannot be  
13 undone is that an accused is entitled in a trial to  
14 see and hear the witness who is against him. And it  
15 is hardly arguable otherwise.

16 THE PRESIDENT: I repeat there are two  
17 questions: The first one, the power to appoint; the  
18 second, the expediency of an appointment at this  
19 stage.

20 On the question of the power to appoint, I  
21 repeat the French Judge is the second appointment by  
22 his country.

23 MR. SMITH: I do not care to add anything  
24 more, your Honor, other than to observe that if this  
25 procedure could be followed after one month's testimony

1 is in, why couldn't it be done after six months'  
2 testimony is in?

3 Thank you very much.

4 THE PRESIDENT: The question of expediency  
5 is a question of fact. And to hold the American  
6 representative disqualified we must find as a fact  
7 that he cannot give a fair trial to the accused.

8 I am saying these things because I want them  
9 met. I cannot speak for the whole Court.

10 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, I am  
11 the American counsel for General DOHIHARA and  
12 Admiral OKA. I have had no opportunity to personally  
13 speak with my clients, but I have talked with my  
14 associate Japanese counsel. We do not join in the  
15 motion.

16 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: May it please the Tribunal--

17 THE PRESIDENT: Captain Kleiman.

18 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: On behalf of the defendant  
19 HIRANUMA, I have consulted with my Japanese co-counsel.  
20 I know the background of General Cramer, his reputa-  
21 tion for fairness, and I welcome him. I welcome the  
22 representative of the United States on the Tribunal.

23 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Furness.

24 MR. FURNESS: May the Tribunal please, as  
25 American counsel for the accused SHIGEMITSU I wish to

1 join in the motion of Mr. Cunningham and the motion  
2 of Mr. Smith.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Logan.

4 MR. LOGAN: If it please the Tribunal,  
5 Japanese and American counsel for Marquis KIDO have  
6 no objection to Major General Cramer sitting in this  
7 case.

8 THE PRESIDENT: Does any other counsel desire  
9 to be heard?

10 JUDGE HSIANG: Mr. President and Members of  
11 the Tribunal: As the Chinese prosecutor I do not  
12 speak for the prosecution as a whole. I merely speak  
13 for China.

14 China welcomes the full representation of  
15 eleven nations represented in this Tribunal. China  
16 especially does not like to see the non-representation  
17 of the United States of America on the bench.

18 This is an international tribunal. The rules  
19 of procedure and the rules relating to the admissi-  
20 bility of evidence, for instance, and some other  
21 matters are different in some respects from national  
22 courts. The grounds presented by the defense counsel  
23 for the motion I think in some respects do not apply  
24 to this International Tribunal. A reasonable inter-  
25 pretation of the Tribunal regarding the appointment,



1 I think there could not be more than eleven appoint-  
2 ments at one single time. If there is one resignation  
3 that resignation could be filled up by a new appoint-  
4 ment. It is the belief of the Chinese prosecutor  
5 that a new member upon assumption of duties, if he  
6 studies the proceedings, can familiarize himself with  
7 proceedings hitherto. There is no legal disability  
8 for that Member to sit on the court.

9 For reasons stated above, China does not  
10 associate itself with the sentiments expressed in the  
11 motion.

12 MR. CUNNINGHAM: If the Court please, I only  
13 have two observations to make on what has been sug-  
14 gested.

15 Concerning the Member of the Tribunal from  
16 France, that matter was seriously considered and due  
17 to the fact that the second appointment was made  
18 before the Tribunal had been duly constituted and  
19 began listening to evidence, no objection was made.

20 On the second proposition of the resignation  
21 of one of the Members of the Tribunal, it is my  
22 thought that there is no provision in the Charter for  
23 such procedure. If the Charter or the framers of the  
24 Charter had contemplated such a situation, there is  
25 nothing which would have prevented them from including

1 that in the Charter; and due to the fact that it was  
2 not included we must assume that it was not intended.

3 On the matter of expediency, it is my  
4 thought that it would be much better for this trial  
5 to proceed with perhaps ten judges and not have the  
6 additional one, rather than have the proceedings  
7 clouded with the possibility of the illegality of the  
8 entire proceedings. Further on the matter of expe-  
9 diency, it is my thought that this is novel and new  
10 procedure. Very, very few precedents have ever been  
11 established on this proposition, including the matter  
12 of military tribunal practice and that this, a case  
13 of such importance, is, my thought, no place to begin  
14 establishing such precedents.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Warren.

16 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, I do  
17 not like to be placed in the position of objecting to  
18 any defense motion, but for the interests of my two  
19 clients I do desire the presence of the new Member of  
20 this Tribunal.

21 I represent a military man and a naval man;  
22 and while we have one military man on the Tribunal, I  
23 should like another one who probably understands. In  
24 support of my position, I am bound to state that an  
25 additional member to a military tribunal or a military

1 court or courts-martial, as you will, is nothing  
2 unusual.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Have you looked at the German  
4 Charter, Mr. Warren?

5 MR. WARREN: Sir?

6 THE PRESIDENT: Have you looked at the German  
7 Charter?

8 MR. WARREN: Yes, sir, I have; and I have  
9 looked at this Charter, also, and I feel that under  
10 this Charter he can sit.

11 THE PRESIDENT: I understand that under the  
12 German Charter representation of a country is excluded  
13 after a certain time. There is no such provision in  
14 our Charter.

15 MR. WARREN: That is right, sir.

16 THE PRESIDENT: Our Charter appears to con-  
17 template that so many nations will be represented.  
18 Would there not be an implied power to maintain that  
19 representation in the absence of anything to the con-  
20 trary?

21 If my recollection of the German Charter is  
22 correct -- and it may not be -- then they saw fit  
23 there to preclude the very position which you say  
24 arises here without any provision.

25 MR. WARREN: I am sorry, your Honor.

1 Yes, your Honor, I cannot agree that this  
2 Charter follows the German Charter, the Nuernberg  
3 Charter. There are dissimilar things in them. This  
4 Charter may be amended and re-amended.

5 A Member of this Tribunal, for instance, may  
6 become ill and leave and be gone for a period of time  
7 and come back and resume his duties. And if a member  
8 is replaced and replaced with another, it is my posi-  
9 tion that it is inherent in a military tribunal to do  
10 that. Because of the exigencies that arise from time  
11 to time in the field, the removal of officers who sit  
12 on military courts from one jurisdiction to another--

13 As I stated, the necessity for removal of  
14 officers from time to time even from a military court,  
15 you must have a replacement. Otherwise many, many  
16 culprits would go unpunished.

17 THE PRESIDENT: Did I hear you say that  
18 vacancies have to be filled on military courts; other-  
19 wise offenses would go unpunished?

20 MR. WARREN: In this respect, your Honor:  
21 An American general courts-martial is comprised of  
22 not less than five members. It might be that those  
23 members would go below five, and if you could not  
24 replace a tribunal it might mean the starting of  
25 another case and continued operation until such time

2977

1 as your witnesses in the passage of time with the  
2 witnesses' loss of memory or other documents or other  
3 things that it could well be that a culprit might not  
4 go punished. It is not unknown.

5 THE PRESIDENT: Suppose six members of this  
6 Court were killed in, say, a motor car accident or  
7 a plane accident, so that a quorum could not be  
8 obtained. Would that terminate the proceedings with-  
9 out a verdict?

10 MR. WARREN: Not necessarily. As I view  
11 military tribunals, and I think those who are familiar  
12 with at least American courts-martial, and Manual for  
13 Courts-martial would know that the Tribunal could be  
14 increased by appointment by qualification.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Why couldn't this Tribunal  
16 be increased by further appointments?  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 MR. WARREN: If the Supreme Allied Commander  
2 had the authority to draw up the Charter in the first  
3 place he has authority to amend it, and he can amend  
4 it and has amended it.

5 THE PRESIDENT: I don't know what the tenor  
6 of your argument is, but I suppose you are really ad-  
7 mitting that if there is power to cancel there ought  
8 to be power to amend.

9 M. WARREN: That is right. Maybe I have  
10 not made myself plain. I am arguing in opposition  
11 to the motion. I thought I had made myself plain,  
12 and I thought the Tribunal understood me, but perhaps  
13 it didn't. Certainly, I am in favor of the new  
14 member sitting as a Member of this Tribunal, and  
15 think that the Supreme Allied Commander has every  
16 right to appoint him. And the only test, it appears  
17 to be, is, can the new Justice of this Tribunal fa-  
18 miliarize himself enough with what has gone on in  
19 the past to be able to render a fair and impartial  
20 judgment in the case? My position is that he can  
21 read the record and can do that. That, of course,  
22 is a question of fact.

23 It is my further position that if the Su-  
24 preme Allied Commander did not think that he could  
25

1 he would not have appointed him.

2 There is only one further requisite that  
3 I am sure the Member himself is familiar with, being  
4 familiar with military law as he is, and that is,  
5 if in his own judgment he cannot sit and render a  
6 fair and impartial judgment in the case, he would  
7 himself disqualify, and I feel certain that he would  
8 do so. Having offered himself, I feel that he feels  
9 himself qualified.

10 Now, my argument does not necessarily mean  
11 that I agree with these principles of law, but they  
12 are law as I view them, as made so by the Charter  
13 and by military law as I understand it. And, in this  
14 particular instance, I would like the Tribunal to  
15 consider seriously what I have to say concerning the  
16 qualifications of the new Member of the Tribunal.

17 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: I am sorry to disturb  
18 your Honor again. I wish to call the Tribunal's  
19 attention to Article 4c of the Charter which reads,

20 "Absence. If a member at any time is absent  
21 and afterwards is able to be present, he shall take  
22 part in all subsequent proceedings; unless he declares  
23 in open court that he is disqualified by reason of  
24 insufficient familiarity with the proceedings which  
25 took place in his absence."

1           Such provision, may it please your Honor,  
2 is not in accordance with the setting up and action  
3 on the part of Members of civil or military courts  
4 as I know them in the United States. I don't think  
5 it lends toward a fair trial. However, as long as  
6 this provision is allowed to remain in the Charter,  
7 I don't think any greater evil is accomplished by  
8 allowing a new Member to come in and acquaint himself  
9 with the proceedings, and I know that General Cramer  
10 has that ability and has that sense of fairness that,  
11 unless he can fully and completely acquaint himself  
12 with the facts in this case, he, himself, would  
13 disqualify himself; and I request, if the Tribunal  
14 decides in favor of the motion made by the American  
15 counsel, that the Tribunal ask of the Supreme Com-  
16 mander to amend the Charter to allow the representa-  
17 tive of the United States to remain on the Tribunal.

18           THE PRESIDENT: The Court will treat Captain  
19 Kleiman's request as a submission.

20           MR. FURNESS: If the Court please, lest there  
21 be misunderstanding, I speak in favor of the challenge  
22 and in favor of the motion for a mistrial.

23           Colonel Warren has argued that under mili-  
24 tary law, procedure substitutions can be made. That  
25 is so in court martials. The reason it is so is be-



1 cause the Articles of War have the specific provi-  
2 sion for it. It is also true of the military com-  
3 missions trying cases in Yokohama and Manila. The  
4 reason it is true is because the order appointing  
5 those commissions has a specific provision for sub-  
6 stitutions.

7 THE PRESIDENT: This is not incompatible  
8 for a fair trial with Americans, but you are submit-  
9 ting it is incompatible for a fair trial with Japan-  
10 ese.

11 MR. FURNESS: I am arguing, sir, that there  
12 is no provision in this Charter and that I believe  
13 the omission is intentional.

14 I also wish to point out that, under the  
15 Articles of War, if the number of men sitting is  
16 reduced below a certain amount, the case must begin  
17 again de novo.

18 As to the Nuernberg Charter, I would like  
19 to point out that, under that Charter, there is a  
20 specific provision for alternates who sit throughout  
21 the trial who hear exactly the same evidence as that  
22 heard by the Judges sitting; and, if he withdraws  
23 or is withdrawn, that they sit as Judge and act on  
24 their own knowledge. I believe that there is a  
25 specific provision in that Charter, too, that there

1 shall be no substitutions.

2 THE PRESIDENT: We will recess now for  
3 fifteen minutes.

4 We may or may not be in a position to give  
5 our decision. We understand we have heard all the  
6 arguments, and we reserve our decision.

7 (Whereupon, at 1445, a recess was  
8 taken until 1515, after which the proceedings  
9 were resumed as follows:)

10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

W  
O  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is  
2 now resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: The Tribunal, by a majority,  
4 holds that General Cramer, the American representative,  
5 is eligible to sit as a Member of this Tribunal, and  
6 dismisses the motion. General Cramer took no part in  
7 the decision.

8 Mr. Smith.

9 MR. SMITH: If your Honor please, in order  
10 to save the record, and on behalf of all counsel who  
11 did object, I would like to ask your Honor to allow  
12 the usual exception.

13 THE PRESIDENT: The application for the  
14 exception is recorded.

15 Is there any further cross-examination of  
16 the witness?

17 MR. OHTA: I am counsel OHTA for the de-  
18 fendant, DOHIHARA.

19 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

20 BY MR. OHTA:

21 Q I should like to have the witness reply to  
22 a question addressed to him this morning.

23 A Prior to the recess the defense counsel  
24 was asking the question about the statement I made,  
25 that is, after the settlement of Chapei Affairs, the

CHING

CROSS

1 Japanese aggression has never stopped. The opinion  
2 I gave in that statement was that the Chinese govern-  
3 ment, desiring to secure peace, had under terrible con-  
4 ditions, come to a settlement with the Japanese over  
5 the question of Chapei Affairs; but the military  
6 aggression undertaken on the part of the Japanese  
7 militarists, had never ceased, even after the Chapei  
8 settlement was effected. By the statement, "has never  
9 stopped" -- the aggression has never stopped," I meant  
10 to say that Japanese military aggression has never  
11 stopped after the agreement was signed. It is not  
12 that up until now the aggression has never stopped.

13 Q That is all I wish to know with respect  
14 to this point. Next, I should like to put a question  
15 with respect to the establishment of the Hopei-Chahar  
16 Political Council. According to your affidavit, Mr.  
17 Witness, the defendant, DOHIHARA, went to Peiping in  
18 September, 1935, and stayed there until the establish-  
19 ment of the Hopei-Chahar Political Council. There  
20 seems to be some error in that statement, and I wish  
21 to point out to you that, although he stayed in Peiping,  
22 he frequently went to Tientsin; is that not a fact?

23 A General DOHIHARA, it seems to me, was then  
24 living in the most eastern three provinces. He fre-  
25 quently came to Peiping, and frequently went to Tientsin.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Then, is it not a mistake to state that  
2 DOHIHARA went frequently to Peiping for purposes of  
3 his project in September, 1935?

4 A In 1936, June, I had negotiated with  
5 DOHIHARA in regard to matters pertaining to Chapel.  
6 Ever since September, 1935, up to February, 1936,  
7 I had frequently seen DOHIHARA.

8 THE PRESIDENT: This is a convenient  
9 break. We will adjourn now until 9:30 tomorrow  
10 morning.

11 (Whereupon, at 1600, an adjourn-  
12 ment was taken until Tuesday, 23 July 1946, at  
13 0930.)  
14

15 - - - -  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

*[Faint, illegible handwriting on the left page]*

Capt. Clarke

21.7.23

23 July

23 JULY 1946

I N D E X  
of  
WITNESSES

<u>Prosecution's Witnesses</u>	<u>Direct</u>	<u>Cross</u>
Ching Teh-chun		2360 to 2418

I N D E X  
of  
EXHIBITS

<u>Pros. No.</u>	<u>Def. No.</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>For Ident.</u>	<u>In Evidence</u>
	202	Scroll presented to DOHIHARA	2374	
	203	Book in Japanese and Chinese entitled "Down with Japan" "Why China Expels Japan" Edited by TAKASHI, Hohu	2389	

-----

1 Tuesday, 23 July, 1946

2 - - -

3 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
4 FOR THE FAR EAST  
5 Court House of the Tribunal  
6 War Ministry Building  
7 Tokyo, Japan

8 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
9 at 0930.

10 - - -

11 Appearances:

12 For the Tribunal, same as before.

13 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

14 For the Defense Section, same as before.

15 - - -

16  
17 (English to Japanese, Japanese to  
18 English, English to Chinese, Chinese to  
19 English interpretation was made by the  
20 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

1                   MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
2 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now in session.

3                   THE PRESIDENT: All the accused are present  
4 except OKAWA and HIRANUMA, who are represented by  
5 counsel.

6                   At the desire of the representative of the  
7 Netherlands, I wish to point out that the statement  
8 in the Nippon Times that he was affected by the heat  
9 is not correct.

10                   I gave no interview to any pressmen. I told  
11 Captain Stickle, who is an officer in the army and  
12 attached, I understand, to General MacArthur's Head-  
13 quarters, that ~~Members~~ representing countries with a  
14 cold climate were suffering severely from the heat.  
15 I did not mention names, nor did I mention countries.  
16 If I decided to mention names, I think that the repre-  
17 sentative of the Netherlands would not have been named.  
18 He has a power of endurance second only to that of the  
19 Supreme Commander. The Supreme Commander, of course,  
20 has had the advantage of being through a hundred  
21 battles in those green hills between Morotai, Port Moresby  
22 and Manila. And he has come through with unimpaired  
23 health and, as far as I can judge, without having  
24 added a day to his years. None of us desires to be  
25 compared with him.

CHING

CROSS

1 Does any counsel desire to mention any matter?

2 COLONEL MORROW: No, sir.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Morrow.

4 COLONEL MORROW. I understand the defense  
5 will continue with cross-examination, if the Court  
6 please.

7 MR. OHTA: I am counsel OHTA, Kinjiro,  
8 representing the defendant DOHIHARA. I wish to be  
9 permitted to continue the cross-examination begun  
10 yesterday.

11 CHING TEH-CHUN, called as a witness  
12 on behalf of the prosecution, resumed the  
13 stand and testified as follows:

14 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

15 BY MR. OHTA:

16 Q Mr. Witness, is it not true that in connection  
17 with the Hopei-Chahar Political Council and the  
18 Autonomy Movement in North China, the Mayor of  
19 Tientsin, Hsiao-Chenyng, and the President of the  
20 Peining Railway, Chen-Chuehsheng, agreed to and sup-  
21 ported the movement which I have just mentioned?

22 A In regard to the establishment of Hopei-  
23 Chahar Political Council, Hsiao-Chenyng and Chen-  
24 Chuehsheng had kept contact with DOHIHARA and had  
25 discussions with him. In regard to the matters of

CHING

CROSS

1 autonomy, the Japanese Government had put up this  
2 proposition and relayed these propositions to the  
3 Chinese Government through Chen-Chuehsheng.

4 Q Did not General Sung-Cheyuan, Commander-in-  
5 Chief of the Peiping Defense Corps, also approve of  
6 this program?

7 THE MONITOR: Correction: Peiping-Tientsin  
8 area.

9 A General Sung-Cheyuan agreed to the establish-  
10 ment of Hopei-Chahar Political Council with the view  
11 to maintain peace and order in and around the area of  
12 Peiping-Tientsin. But he has never agreed to the  
13 Autonomous Movement in as far as that area is  
14 concerned.

15 Q However, is it not true that General Sung-  
16 Cheyuan, on the 17th of November, established the  
17 Council for the People's Guidance, and through this  
18 organ negotiated with the central government on this  
19 matter?

20 A Such Guidance Council as you said was never  
21 in existence.

22 Q Are you aware of the fact that General Sung-  
23 Cheyuan very greatly welcomed the establishment of  
24 the Hopei-Chahar Political Council and that he had  
25 given voice to the principle of respecting the will

CHING

CROSS

1 of the people and the maintenance of harmony between  
2 Japan and China?

3 A Probably there was.

4 Q However, at this time are you not aware of  
5 the fact that not only General Sung-Cheyuan but all  
6 who participated in this program welcomed the pro-  
7 ject and expressed their gratitude to General DOHIHARA  
8 for the efforts he had made, and that General Sung,  
9 through Chen-Chuehsheng, expressed the desire that  
10 General DOHIHARA remain in that area in order to  
11 carry on liaison work between the Kwantung Army and  
12 the Tientsin Army?

13 A That I don't know. What I know is that at  
14 that time all of us were feeling the oppression of  
15 DOHIHARA, and to that oppression we felt very badly.

16 Q Then I wish to present to the witness a  
17 scroll which was sent by General Sung-Cheyuan to  
18 General DOHIHARA as a token of his gratitude. I wish  
19 to have the witness look at this scroll.

20 CLERK OF THE COURT: This scroll will be  
21 marked defense exhibit No. 202.

22 THE PRESIDENT: It was not tendered. I do  
23 not know whether he wants it tendered or not. Do not  
24 mark it yet.

25 CLERK OF THE COURT: Mark it for identification.

CHING

CROSS

1 THE PRESIDENT: If he tenders that document,  
2 or whatever it is, it may have a serious effect on the  
3 course of the trial. I will see that he understands  
4 his position before it is offered.

5 MR. OHTA: Then, Mr. President, I should like  
6 to consider the presentation of this scroll as evidence  
7 at a later stage. But may I be permitted to show this  
8 scroll to the witness for identification?

9 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

10 (Whereupon, a document was handed to  
11 the witness.)

12 THE PRESIDENT: In the Charter it will  
13 appear that the prosecution has the last word, in any  
14 event. At least that construction is open.

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

CHING

CROSS

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
i  
f  
f  
i  
c  
o  
n

1 A This is the first time I have seen this  
2 scroll. This scroll was presented by General Sung  
3 Che-yuan to DOHIHARA, at the time he left China, as a  
4 souvenir. This presentation is rather common between  
5 the officials of the countries.

6 At that time General Sung Che-yuan was  
7 taking charge of affairs in that area. He not only  
8 presented scrolls or gifts of like nature to Japanese  
9 officials, but also he presented to other military  
10 attaches or other foreign officials having official  
11 functions in that area.

12 Q Next, Mr. Witness, I should like to inquire  
13 with respect to a statement by you in your affidavit  
14 with respect to the July 7 Incident. You speak of  
15 TANAKA's Second Plan of World Absorption, et cetera,  
16 on the fourth page of the affidavit. I should not  
17 consider this to be a fact. Is it not a mistake on  
18 your part?

19 A This statement of mine was based on the  
20 pamphlet which was then circulated throughout China.  
21 In that pamphlet it was stated that TANAKA had the  
22 plan to dominate the whole world.

23 That plan involves four stages: The first  
24 stage was that the Japanese would dominate and occupy  
25 Manchuria and Mongolia; the second stage was that of

1 domination over North China; the third and fourth  
2 stages were evidences by the fact, in 1940, when the  
3 Japanese started the Pearl Harbor adventure.

4 Q Who was the author of this pamphlet?

5 A That was printed in China, was known as  
6 the "TANAKA Memorandum."

7 Q On page 4 of your affidavit -- page 5 --  
8 you say that Japanese troops maneuvered on Chinese  
9 territory at their own will. However, are you not  
10 aware of the fact that following the Boxer Uprising  
11 in the year 1900 a protocol known as the "Boxer  
12 Protocol" was concluded between China and other  
13 Allied countries and that the Japanese Army maneuvered  
14 on Chinese soil on the basis of treaty stipulations  
15 as provided for in the Boxer Protocol?

16 A Yes, I know. But, according to the practice  
17 then, it was that before any maneuver was taking  
18 place, a notice must be sent to the local government  
19 through which the inhabitants of that particular  
20 locality would be informed.

21 THE MONITOR: I would like to make a correct-  
22 ion for English interpretation of defense counsel's  
23 question: "Not only our country, but other signa-  
24 tories to this protocol had the same right to ma-  
25 neuver on Chinese soil."

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Are you also not aware of the fact that  
2 these proper steps were taken before these maneuvers  
3 were held?

4 A Many protests were made by the Chinese  
5 authorities to the Japanese military authorities on  
6 the ground that many of the maneuvers were not  
7 previously informed, and the inhabitants of the  
8 various localities were very much frightened. The  
9 maneuvers taking place at the time of the outbreak of  
10 Marco Polo Bridge Incident was never informed prev-  
11 iously to the Chinese authorities.

12 Q Maneuvers were held in that area after per-  
13 mission had been secured from General Sung Che-yuan  
14 in accordance with the treaty stipulations in the  
15 Boxer Protocol; but were not even greater permission  
16 secured before these maneuvers were held?

17 Addition: Did not the Japanese Army author-  
18 ities secure from General Sung Che-yuan permission  
19 even greater than that permitted by the Boxer Proto-  
20 col?

21 A In the first point, as far as that Boxer  
22 Protocol is concerned, the foreign countries may put  
23 up maneuvers along the railway line, but they are not  
24 authorized to have -- to take any maneuvers in any  
25 further off places.



1 Q Shortly after the outbreak of the Lukuoohiao  
2 Incident on 29 July, 1937, an incident called the  
3 Tung-Chow Incident occurred. Are you familiar with  
4 or aware of this Incident?

5 A I only heard of that after the Incident  
6 took place. At that time I was already not in  
7 Peiping.

8 Q The Tung-Chow Incident was started by Chi-  
9 nese instigators and was started against the East  
10 Hopei Anti-Communist regime by a part of the Pao-an-  
11 tsui or the Peace Preservation Corps in Tung-Chow.  
12 As a result of this attack, many of Japanese nation-  
13 als resident there, including many women and children,  
14 were massacred. Even after this Incident, you must  
15 have received reports to the effect, is that not so?

16 A I only heard of this matter. At that time  
17 I -- General Sung Che-yuan and I both were in Pao-  
18 Ting.

19 Q Then, are you also not aware of the fact  
20 that Japanese troops in Peiping were fired on by  
21 Chinese troops on 26 July of the same year?

22 A The fighting started from July 8 when the  
23 hostilities at the Marco Polo Bridge broke out and  
24 that hostilities was never ended until somewhere in  
25 1945.

1 Q In your affidavit you state that General  
2 DOHIHARA was responsible for the outbreak of the  
3 Incident of September 18, 1931. On what grounds do  
4 you make this charge against him?

5 A That statement was based on intelligence  
6 reports and documents received by the Chinese  
7 authorities.

8 Q Are you not aware of the fact that about the  
9 time of the September 18 Incident DOHIHARA had gone  
10 to Tokyo to report on the NAKAMURA, Shintaro Incident  
11 and that when the Incident broke out on September 18  
12 he was en route back to Mukden after having made the  
13 report and was very much astonished when he heard of  
14 it, which was after the Incident broke out?

15 A That I don't know.

16 MR. OHTA: That concludes my cross-examin-  
17 ation.

18 THE PRESIDENT: The scroll shown the witness  
19 should be marked for identification.

20 Call out the number.

21 CLERK OF THE COURT: It is marked 202 for  
22 identification.

23 (Whereupon, the document above  
24 referred to was marked defense ex-  
25 hibit No. 202 for identification.)

CHING

CROSS

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 MR. ITO: I am counsel ITO, Kiyoshi, counsel  
2 for the defendant, MATSUI, Iwane.

3 Since the witness does not speak the official  
4 language of this Tribunal, and, naturally, it would  
5 increase the difficulties were he to speak in another  
6 language, I shall ask questions which it would be  
7 sufficient for the witness to reply with yes or no.

8 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

9 BY MR. ITO:

10 Q I should like to have the witness be careful  
11 not to stray outside of the point asked in my questions  
12 and that he stick to the point.

13 THE PRESIDENT: These admonitions are not  
14 called for. Please ask questions straight away.

15 THE CHINESE MONITOR: As the Chinese Monitor,  
16 I wish to state that there has been a mistake in trans-  
17 lation, and that the original in Chinese reads, "the  
18 Japanese military clique," rather than, as the interro-  
19 gator just said, "the Japanese aggressor."

20 Q In your affidavit, Mr. Witness, you men-  
21 tioned a Japanese officer by the name of MATSUI in  
22 two places. At one point you speak of a MATSUI, Chief  
23 of the Special Service Section, who was in Peiping at  
24 the outbreak of the Marco Polo Incident on July 7, 1937.  
25 In another place you speak of a retired Japanese army

CHING

CROSS

1 officer by the name of MATSUI having come to Peiping  
2 in the fall of 1935. May I ask whether these two  
3 MATSUIS are one and the same person or different per-  
4 sons?

5 A They are two different persons.

6 Q When this retired General MATSUI visited North  
7 China in 1935, he saw you, Mr. Witness, and he said  
8 that, in quoting the words of SUN Yat-Sen, if Japan  
9 and China would come together and join hands it would  
10 mean the salvation of Asia. That was the meaning of  
11 the Greater Asia Doctrine; is that not so?

12 A I don't recall that.

13 Q If you do not recall this fact, I shall refer  
14 to the Greater East Asia Annual, and, sir, will you try  
15 to recall this fact?

16 THE PRESIDENT: Continue with your question.

17 Q Do you not recall that on the 1st of December  
18 the leaders of North China gathered together at the  
19 Hsi-hu Hotel in Tientsin and created a Founders Committee  
20 for the China Greater Asia Association?

21 A I never participated in that meeting.

22 Q However, this record shows that General ~~SUN~~  
23 ~~Chao-yuan~~ HAN-Fuchii, and yourself, CHING Teh-chun, and  
24 others, had participated in this gathering.

25 A As I said, I never participated in the meeting

CHING

CROSS

1 of the so-called Friends of the Greater Asia Society  
2 in China. Whether somebody used my name or not, that  
3 I cannot tell. I heard that one man, CHI Hsieh-yuan,  
4 who is now being committed as a traitor in China, par-  
5 ticipated in that meeting.

6 Q Was there any other person in North China by  
7 the name of CHING Teh-chun?

8 A No. Was it CHENG Chueh-sheng who used my  
9 name to be put up in that record?

10 A In your affidavit you state that the Greater  
11 East Asia -- the Greater Asia Doctrine -- would be  
12 perfectly satisfactory if it were based on the spirit  
13 of reciprocity. However, Doctor SUN Yat-Sen's Greater  
14 Asia Doctrine -- with reference to Doctor SUN Yat-Sen's  
15 Greater Asia Doctrine, I should not think that leaders  
16 in North China would not approve of it; and so I am  
17 inclined to think that you were among those who  
18 approved it. Will you try to recall your position on  
19 that matter?

20 A When MATSUI was talking on the subject of  
21 establishing the French Office of Greater Asia Society,  
22 General SUNG and I both expressed disapproval of the  
23 project; but this project was approved by SUNG Che-yuan  
24 and CHI Hsieh yuan, as I told you. As I have said, the  
25 meeting was held in Tientsin, and that HUNG Fu-chu and

CHING

CROSS

1 SUNG Che-yuan were both present at the meeting. But,  
2 as a matter of fact, HUNG Fu-chu was always stationed  
3 in Chen-tung, but he sometimes came to Tientsin. So  
4 I even doubt if that is true.

5 THE PRESIDENT: We will recess now for fifteen  
6 minutes.

7 (Whereupon, at 1046, a recess was  
8 taken until 1102, after which the proceedings  
9 were resumed as follows:)

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

CHING

CROSS

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now  
2 resumed.

3 BY MR. ITO (Continuing):

4 Q Mr. Witness, I must say that you have said  
5 that many leaders in North China were unable to attend,  
6 even by airplane, the founders' meeting of the Greater  
7 Asia Society in Tientsin. But what I said is not  
8 that all or the many Chinese leaders in North China  
9 attended this founders' meeting, but what I did say  
10 was that a founders' meeting was held in Tientsin and  
11 that after that, many of the leaders in North China  
12 approved of this organization.

13 A As I said, I have never participated in that  
14 meeting. If I had ever been to that meeting, I would  
15 have signed the attendance book and if I had signed  
16 the attendance book, naturally I would recognize my  
17 own writing. If I had never attended and never signed  
18 the attendance book, then it is possible that somebody  
19 else just put my name on.

20 Q I did not say that you, Mr. Witness, attended  
21 this meeting in Tientsin. In your statement, Mr. Wit-  
22 ness, you said, you speak of the Chinese Greater East  
23 Asia Association as being a branch of an organization  
24 with headquarters in Japan. But the record upon which  
25 I speak does not mention a branch but an entirely

G  
o  
l  
d  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

CHING

CROSS

1 independent Chinese organization founded upon the  
2 Greater East Asia doctrine. The resolution of the  
3 meeting of which I speak states that it has been a  
4 mistake for the peoples of Asia to quarrel among  
5 themselves and that, instead, the peoples of Asia,  
6 in the spirit of the fact that Asia is an area for the  
7 peoples of Asia, should resolve their quarrels and  
8 become friends and that China and Japan, most of all,  
9 should come together, collaborate as friends, and lay  
10 the basis for the emancipation of Asia. And this  
11 declaration further goes on to state that since a  
12 Greater Asia Association has been established in  
13 Japan, a similar organization independent unto itself  
14 should also be created in China in parallel with the  
15 organization in Japan. Do you not recall this?

16 A I am afraid that the defense lawyer had  
17 mixed up the purpose of the so-called "Great Asia  
18 Society" with the organization, with the actual  
19 doings of that society. The reason that I abstained  
20 from participating in this meeting is that --

21 Q If you have not approved of it, that is  
22 enough from you.

23 A No, I must give it further treatment.

24 Q I should like to ask questions on questions of  
25 greater import. That is not necessary. In your



1 affidavit you speak of an agreement between you and  
2 ~~DOHIHARA~~; and in that agreement it is stated that the  
3 activities of the Kuomintang should be removed from  
4 the Chahar District. What do you mean by that?

5 A There was no stipulation to the effect that  
6 the Chinese troops should be withdrawn from Chahar  
7 but there was a stipulation that the troops stationed  
8 in the Sixth District North of Kalgan should be with-  
9 drawn and in its place the police guards should be  
10 sent forward.

11 Q You speak of the fact that in Chahar Province  
12 there was an anti-Japanese organ, there were measures  
13 for the control and enforcement of measures against  
14 the anti-Japanese organs as well as anti-Japanese  
15 activities in Chahar Province. Now what kind of  
16 organizations did exist in that area, what kind of  
17 anti-Japanese organizations existed in that area, may  
18 I ask?

19 A There was never any anti-Japanese associations  
20 or organizations in Chahar. The policy of the Central  
21 Government then was that unless there is no hope of  
22 peace, they will not give up the negotiations of peace  
23 and if there is no -- unless there is no hope of peace,  
24 they will not give up the hope of peace.

25 Local government then, in conformity with the

1 policy of the Central Government, tried their best  
2 to carry out this policy and there was not at all  
3 any anti-Japanese movement.

4 The Japanese militarists, with a view to push  
5 forward their aggressive plan and with the ultimate  
6 end of effecting autonomous movement in North China,  
7 they simply branded the headquarters, the Kuomintang  
8 Headquarters in the Chapei Province (northern part  
9 of Chahar Province) and other political organs as  
10 anti-Japanese organizations.

11 Q I should like to have you reply to my  
12 question.

13 A There was no anti-Japanese movement in China,  
14 I said that.

15 Q In other words, Mr. Witness, you mean to  
16 say there was no anti-Japanese organizations in Chahar  
17 at that time?

18 A The fact that there were many Japanese goods  
19 flooding the markets in Kalgan and north of Kalgan  
20 is a very good proof that there was no anti-Japanese  
21 sentiment existing then in that area. The Japanese  
22 just wanted to get rid of Chinese political organiza-  
23 tions and other official organizations, got rid of  
24 them in those areas and branded these political  
25 official organizations as anti-Japanese organizations.

CHING

CROSS

1 COL. MORROW: If the Court please, I ask that  
2 counsel be warned to allow the witness to finish his  
3 answer. There are several instances here where the  
4 witness here has been prevented from finishing his  
5 answer.

6 THE PRESIDENT: The red lights are not being  
7 effectively used and there should be a military  
8 policeman along at the lectern with counsel.  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

A  
b  
r  
a  
m  
&  
M  
O  
r  
s  
e

Q Then, Mr. Witness, you say in your statement that it was necessary to enforce measures against anti-Japanese organizations in Chahar. From this fact I must assume that there was an anti-Japanese movement. Will you clarify this point?

A That expression is an expression loaned from the demands made by the Japanese. At that time the Japanese took the party quarters in the local areas, the editorials published by papers against the Japanese theory of putting North China as an autonomous government, and students parades as gestures of anti-Japanese movements. The local government then, pursuant to an order received from the central government, which for the purpose of securing peace had ordered that all the party quarters in the various districts and some political organs were removed from these districts and the students and other people were admonished by the authorities not to hold any more parades.

Q What do you mean by youth demonstrations?

A There was never any students parades held in Chahar, but in Peiping there was a few parades held. The students held the parades simply because they felt that the Japanese aggression was endless; that the Japanese is pushing forward even

1 as far as Peiping then. At that time I, as mayor of  
2 Peiping, advised the students to go back to their  
3 schools and told them that if in the event of Jap-  
4 anese closing in on Peiping, we would get together  
5 and try to ward off this danger. Ever since that  
6 time I received the students en masse and gave them  
7 that piece of advice the students went back to their  
8 schools and they have never held any parades any more.

9 Q The anti-Japanese movement carried on by  
10 the Japanese youth, if you search into the causes  
11 of this movement, is it not correct to say that anti-  
12 foreign education, especially anti-Japanese education,  
13 was carried on in China long before the Manchurian  
14 Incident?

15 A This is nothing but a patriotic movement  
16 from the students. The students being oppressed by  
17 the Japanese aggression expressed themselves in such  
18 an act. This patriotic movement was seen only after  
19 September 18. Before that we had one movement also  
20 held by the students, called the "Five-Four Movement."  
21 That movement was only for cultural purposes.

22 Q I have here, Mr. Witness, a book, and it  
23 states that China after the opium war will fall  
24 victim to the aggression of Britain, France, Germany,  
25 Japan, and America, and that China must expel those

CHING

CROSS

1 foreign powers and that this type of doctrine was  
2 written into the text books used in the schools of  
3 China in their geography books, in their history  
4 books, and in their language books, of which there  
5 are more than five hundred different kinds. Are  
6 you or are you not aware of this fact?

7 A That I do not know.

8 MR. ITO: That concludes my cross-examina-  
9 tion, sir.

10 COLONEL MORROW: I would like to know the  
11 name of that book, if the Court please.

12 MR. WARREN: We have a copy. You can see  
13 it later.

14 I am Colonel Warren.

15 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

16 BY MR. WARREN:

17 Q In your statement which you adopted before  
18 this Tribunal as your evidence in chief you remarked  
19 under Prologue A-1, the political situation and you  
20 set out various members of the Chinese Government as  
21 holding various positions. Will you tell the Tri-  
22 bunal whether all of those men were appointed by the  
23 Central Government of China or the Nanking Government?

24 A They were all appointed by the Central  
25 Government.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Were they all members of the same political  
2 party?

3 A They were all members of the Kuomintang.

4 Q As a matter of fact, the Kuomintang, or the  
5 political party to which you refer, was the National  
6 Government at Nanking, is not that correct?

7 A Yes.

8 Q At that time how far did the control of the  
9 various provinces of China -- strike that. I will  
10 put it this way: how far did the governmental con-  
11 trol of this political party extend in China at the  
12 time of the so-called Incident at the Marco Polo  
13 Bridge?

14 A With the exception of the northeastern  
15 three provinces, the Province of Jehol and the  
16 twenty-two districts east of Hopei Province, the  
17 Province of Hopei, Shangteng, Shangshi, **Chahar**, were  
18 all under the power and control of the Kuomintang.

19 Q The provinces which you excepted then were  
20 the provinces which were in controversy between the  
21 Nanking Government and the Japanese Government. Is  
22 that not correct?

23 A Yes, they were.

24 Q Now, were not the provinces which you named  
25 under the control of the Nanking Government actually

CHING

CROSS

1 under the control of the army, which belonged to the  
2 political party that you were a member of?

3 A Yes.

4 Q Is it not true that the Nanking Government  
5 had aggressive ideas of its own which were well  
6 known to Japan?

7 A I do not understand what you mean. The  
8 Nanking Government has never harbored any aggressive  
9 plans or ideas.

10 Q Do you mean to tell this Tribunal that the  
11 political party of which you are a member, which is,  
12 and was at that time the Central Government of China,  
13 never had any idea of expanding its sphere of in-  
14 fluence by war or otherwise?

15 A No.

16 Q Now, in the following paragraph, or the  
17 second paragraph rather, under sub-paragraph A-1, you  
18 state that: "Since their costless invasion of the  
19 Chinese North-Eastern three Provinces, followed by  
20 the invasion of the Jehol Province, and the Battle  
21 of the Great Wall, the Japanese aggressors considered  
22 all these Provinces in North China as something that  
23 could be very easily taken over." Now, I should like  
24 to know where you got the authority for that  
25 statement. And, General, sir, I want facts, if you



CHING

CROSS

1 have them; if you have no facts to back up that  
2 statement, will you so state?

3 INTERPRETER: Where is the Chinese copy?

4 MR. WARREN: I don't have the Chinese copy  
5 of this. Can you read the English and interpret it  
6 into Chinese? It is document 1750.

7 THE PRESIDENT: Well, I think this is a  
8 convenient time to recess, but before we do I would  
9 like the counsel for -- is it MATSUI, Iwane, to tender  
10 the book from which he read to the witness, to tender  
11 it for identification. What is the number?

12 CLERK OF THE COURT: Marked for identification  
13 No. 203.

14 (Whereupon, the document above re-  
15 ferred to was marked ~~defense~~ exhibit No. 203 for  
16 identification.)

17 MR. WARREN: May we note our exception to  
18 the order of the Tribunal? Reference merely was  
19 made to it, and asked if he had knowledge of it, and  
20 if we decide to use this at a later time, which we pro-  
21 bably will, it is forcing us to present our defense  
22 before we have had an opportunity to examine the  
23 evidence or to move for a finding of not guilty.

24 THE PRESIDENT: Counsel is not satisfied  
25

CHING

CROSS

1 merely to ask the witness whether he knew of the  
2 book, but he went further and read from it. Under  
3 those circumstances it should be in the custody of  
4 the Court. We will recess now until one thirty.

5 MR. WARREN: If your Honor please, I had  
6 forgotten that I did quote from the book, and I was  
7 wrong and may I withdraw my objection? I am sorry,  
8 sir.

9 (Whereupon, at 1200, a recess was  
10 taken.)

11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

## AFTERNOON SESSION

1  
2  
3 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

4  
5 Mr. President, we have a Chinese-English  
interpreter who is now ready to be sworn.

6 THE PRESIDENT: Let him be sworn.

7 (Whereupon, Major M. N. Chien was  
8 sworn as Chinese to English and English to  
9 Chinese interpreter.)

10 - - -

11 C H I N G T E H - C H U N, called as a witness  
12 on behalf of the prosecution, resumed the  
13 stand and testified as follows:

14 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Warren.

15 MR. WARREN: Would the translation section read  
16 back the question in English-Japanese and again to the  
17 witness in Chinese.

18 ACTING LANGUAGE SECTION CHIEF: The reporter  
19 has changed shifts and is not here to read it back to  
20 you.

21 MR. WARREN: I do not exactly remember the  
22 question.

23 THE PRESIDENT: You had better repeat it.

24 BY MR. WARREN (Continuing):

25 Q In your affidavit, second paragraph of

D  
u  
d  
a  
&  
W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n

CHING

CROSS

1 subparagraph 1A, you say that "since their costless  
2 invasion of the Chinese North-Eastern three Provinces,  
3 followed by the invasion of the Jehol Province, and  
4 the Battle of the Great Wall, the Japanese aggressors  
5 considered all these Provinces in North China as some-  
6 thing that could be very easily taken over." Now, for  
7 the basis of -- we should like, rather, your authority  
8 for the basis of that statement and we desire facts,  
9 if you have facts, and if you do not have them we  
10 desire that you so state.

11 A Since the Mukden Incident Japanese took over  
12 Manchuria in their possession, and in 1933 the Jehol  
13 Incident, in the same year the Japanese Army marched  
14 in the Great Wall line, that is, the Ku-peikow Gate--  
15 the Leng-kou, the Hsi-honkou, Ku-peikow. The above-men-  
16 tioned gates along the Great Wall were all strategic  
17 points, and south of that Great Wall the terrain lies  
18 flat and is a plain and is very hard to defense. That  
19 is why we can draw the conclusion since the Japanese  
20 Army are marching from the north to the south and  
21 past our strategic points of defense, and evidently  
22 their aim is to take the North China into their posses-  
23 sion, too.

24 Q General, sir, I asked you if you had facts,  
25 not conclusions. Do you have any facts other than any

CHING

CROSS

1 conclusions that you drew?

2 A Since May of 1933 the Japanese forces had  
3 reached Tung-chou which is only forty mile from Peiping,  
4 the political center of North China, and along that  
5 line from Tung-chou to Tientsin. That is a very evident  
6 fact, that Japan was going to take over Peiping and  
7 Tientsin. By this fact there comes the May 31 Tang-ku  
8 Agreement. By this Tang-ku Agreement we were forced  
9 into, Chinese troops had to withdraw from the line men-  
10 tioned above; that is, from Tung-chou to Tientsin --  
11 had to withdraw all east from that line.

12 Q Just a minute. You are obviously not answering  
13 the question or you misunderstand what I mean. Now,  
14 how many Japanese troops, if you know, were in the  
15 Northern Provinces, in northern China, in July, 1937?

16 THE INTERPRETER: Is this question a continua-  
17 tion of your last question?

18 MR. WARREN: This question is not.

19 THE INTERPRETER: General Ching hasn't fin-  
20 ished up his last answer yet.

21 MR. WARREN: I stated that I did not desire  
22 him to finish. He did not answer my question. I am  
23 proceeding.

24 A According to our knowledge, at the time when  
25 the Marco Polo Bridge Incident broke out, the Japanese

CHING

CROSS

1 had a division in Peiping and Tientsin. That is about  
2 15,000 men.

3 Q Then you do not know, and did not know at that  
4 time, how many troops were there, did you?

5 THE INTERPRETER: We just say that 15,000 men  
6 in Peiping and Tientsin--

7 MR. WARREN: Before you interpret that, I have  
8 not asked this witness a question. He answered my  
9 other and entirely to my satisfaction.

10 A We don't know the exact number.

11 MR. WARREN: Just a moment, please. I stated  
12 that I want to ask another question. He answered my  
13 question. I do not care for the voluntary statements  
14 of this witness. I want to proceed with my cross-  
15 examination.

16 COLONEL MORROW: I take it, if the Court please,  
17 that a witness can always make an answer and explain  
18 and expand.

19 THE PRESIDENT: Yes, undoubtedly.

20 MR. WARREN: Yes, your Honor. How is he going  
21 to explain or expand on the statement that there were  
22 15,000 there according to their belief? That is all I  
23 asked him.

24 THE PRESIDENT: Well, we will hear his ampli-  
25 fication.

CHING

CROSS

1 MR. WARREN: Very well. I object to it, sir.

2 A (Continuing) We don't know the exact number.  
3 All over the North China, Japanese troops. But we know  
4 definitely that there is a garrison command in Tientsin,  
5 and a brigade in Peiping, totaling about a division,  
6 which has the strength of 15,000, and there are some  
7 more over other parts of China which we don't know the  
8 exact number.

9 Q Now, you state definitely that you know there  
10 were 15,000 at least. Will you go ahead and state  
11 whether or not those troops were in there illegally?

12 A According to the agreement drawn after the  
13 Opium War, Japanese, or Japan, was authorized to sta-  
14 tion troops only along the railway from Peiping to  
15 Ching-huang-tao to guard the safety of that railroad.  
16 Any amount excessive than the necessity is illegal.

17 Q In order that the witness will not later be  
18 confused, I am referring specifically to a time in  
19 early July preceding July 7, which is on the date that  
20 the so-called Marco Polo Bridge Incident occurred. I  
21 ask him if he refers to the same period of time.

22 A What we have said is referred to the same time  
23 as what you asked; and after July 7, 1937, after the  
24 incident started, Japan massed more troops from Man-  
25 churia to North China.

CHING

CROSS

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 Q On page 4 of the American version of  
2 document 1750, which is prosecution's exhibit 198,  
3 you refer to the incident when a soldier of a Japan-  
4 ese Army was alleged to have been lost on maneuvers  
5 and a search was demanded in Chinese territory by the  
6 Japanese. And, after having had that intelligence  
7 conveyed to you, you stated, "I immediately" -- I  
8 am reading now -- "replied that Japanese troops,  
9 maneuvering in Chinese territory at their own will,  
10 were in violation of international law."

11 Do you still maintain that they were in  
12 violation of international law?

13 A We have answered this question to you this  
14 morning.

15 Q Ask him to answer the question.

16 A According to the agreement drawn in 1900,  
17 after the Opium War, though it authorized the Japan-  
18 ese to station troops along the railroad in North  
19 China, and the necessary maneuver along the railroad --  
20 but in case of that maneuver, has to be -- the  
21 Chinese Government has to be notified in ad-  
22 vance so that all the residents along the railroad  
23 would be in turn notified, and to prevent any mis-  
24 understanding.

25 First, we have to make a correction here:



CHING

CROSS

1 The agreement drawn in 1900 was after the Boxer --  
2 so-called Boxer trouble which is now the Opium War.  
3 And also the place where the Japanese troops was  
4 authorized to carry out maneuver can be too far from  
5 where they were stationed. They cannot be stationed  
6 at Fengtai and maneuver near Nanking.

7 Q I will read to you from prosecution's ex-  
8 hibit 58 which has heretofore been introduced in  
9 evidence, and it refers to a report adopted by the  
10 League of Nations Assembly on October 6, 1937. It is  
11 on page 384 as mine is marked.

12 "At the beginning of July 1937, there were  
13 about 7,000 Japanese soldiers in Northern China.  
14 These troops were kept there on the basis of the  
15 Protocol of September 7th, 1901 (and its annexes),  
16 concluded between China and the Powers having le-  
17 gations at Peking. Under these Agreements, China  
18 recognized the right of each Power to maintain a  
19 permanent guard in the legations quarter at Peking  
20 and to occupy twelve specified points for the maint-  
21 enance of open communication between the capital and  
22 the sea. Under the terms of a supplementary Agree-  
23 ment of July 15th-18, 1902, the foreign troops  
24 stationed at these points had 'the right of carrying  
25 on field exercises and rifle practice, etc., without

CHING

CROSS

1 informing the Chinese authorities, except in the case  
2 of feux de guerre'."

3 (Whereupon, the witness began to  
4 speak in Chinese.)

5 Q (Continuing) I haven't asked any question  
6 yet.

7 Now, after having had this read to you, do  
8 you agree with that statement or do you disagree?

9 A We still hold that the statement is true be-  
10 cause we had an agreement with the Japanese garrison  
11 commander that they should notify us in advance of  
12 any of their field exercises.

13 Q Now, that's the point that I want to get to,  
14 General, sir. Regardless of the international commit-  
15 ments of your nation, you felt, or your garrisons and  
16 your various generals felt that they could make agree-  
17 ments without the approval of their government; is  
18 that correct?

19 A It is not a remedy to the agreement; but,  
20 since the Japanese troops were carrying out maneuvers  
21 and field exercises so frequently, not like other  
22 foreign troops in that authorized area, we had to  
23 have some kind of agreement with them to prevent  
24 violence and misunderstanding to happen.

25 Beside me there would be another witness who

CHING

CROSS

1 was a District Minister of Wan-Ping Hsien where the  
2 incident started. He can tell you that he had an  
3 agreement with the Japanese battalion commander  
4 stationed at Fengtai whose name is ICHINOKE, Kiyonao.

5 Q General, sir, I am not interested in the  
6 agreement that you say you had there. I'm inter-  
7 ested in the statement you made to this Court as a  
8 factual account that you told your subordinates that  
9 the Japanese were acting in violation of international  
10 law.

11 The question is, why did you inform your  
12 subordinate officers that Japan acted in violation of  
13 international law when she did not act in violation  
14 of international law?

15 A The reason why I told my subordinates  
16 Japanese were violating the international law were  
17 because they didn't hold their promise. Maybe I  
18 didn't have sufficient reference at hand in that  
19 time in this literary term "international law."

20 Q General, sir, what made you believe that an  
21 oral agreement between two battalion commanders, or  
22 whatever their regimental rank was if they had any --  
23 a sort of a gentlemen's agreement -- could anywhere  
24 breach international law and international agree-  
25 ments between two nations?

CHING

CROSS

1           A   A gentlemen's agreement between the chief  
2 of local government and the Japanese garrison com-  
3 mander was to maintain the peace and order of that  
4 area. It is not in contrary with the spirit of  
5 international law.

6           Why I said that this gentlemen's agreement  
7 is not in contrary to international law, because the  
8 Japanese troops were carrying out intensive field  
9 maneuvers and with actual firing. If they don't  
10 give us notice in advance, it would incur injury of  
11 the Chinese civilians and residents in that area and  
12 will cause violence and disorder which is in contrary  
13 of the spirit of international law or the agreement  
14 drawn in 1900 to maintain the peace and order along  
15 the railroad, to maintain the communication to the  
16 sea. If they didn't give us notice in advance, and  
17 carrying out their maneuver with actual light ammu-  
18 nition, it would result in disorder and violence.

19          Q   Now, General, what were the Chinese troops  
20 doing all this time? What were they doing?

21          A   At the moment when the incident was re-  
22 ported to me, I immediately called up the regimental  
23 commander of my troops stationed at Marco Polo Bridge  
24 and Wan-Ping Hsien and checked that our troops have  
25 all retired -- were all sleeping at that time.

CHING

CROSS

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 Q General, you stated a few moments ago that  
2 Japan had more troops than any other nation in China  
3 at the time in accordance with the Protocol of Sep-  
4 tember 7, 1901. Now, is it not true that Japan also  
5 suffered many more losses of life of her nationals  
6 and of destruction of property by undisciplined mem-  
7 bers of the armed forces of China, and by banditry  
8 than any other nation in China at that time?

9 A Since the 1901 agreement was drawn, there  
10 was not disorder in North China which caused any  
11 Japanese suffering of lives. It is because that Japan  
12 was preparing for an invasion and aggression, and using  
13 this reason like you stated to mass troops in North  
14 China. In fact, at a time around July 7, 1937, the order  
15 in North China, especially around Peiping, was well  
16 maintained. This is a known fact to all the foreign  
17 residents in Peiping, especially English and Americans.  
18 Japan did try to create disorder in North China, to use  
19 it as an alibi or excuse to concentrate more troops in  
20 that area. It happened in Chang-peh Hsien, where Japan  
21 hired rascals and so-called ronins to make trouble, but  
22 it was well taken care of by the local government, and  
23 order was restored.

24 Q General, sir, you are not answering my ques-  
25 tion. I am not interested in a speech. What I asked

CHING

CROSS

1 you was: is it not a fact that the Japanese lost more  
2 nationals as a result of barbarity and banditry and  
3 undisciplined soldiers, and more property than any  
4 other nation in China under the Protocol Agreement?  
5 That can be answered very simply, yes or no.

6 A What I say meant no.

7 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Warren, would you  
8 help us by stating just what you are trying to es-  
9 tablish in referring to Chinese losses. I did not have  
10 the impression when you were reading from the Lytton  
11 report that your purpose is to show that what the  
12 Japanese did was justified under treaties about which  
13 no question arises -- those following the Boxer Re-  
14 bellion. Where are we now?

15 MR. WARREN: I am speaking about Japanese  
16 losses, sir. Great stress has been laid on this re-  
17 port that I have.

18 THE PRESIDENT: Aggressors, or we will say  
19 invaders, can lose heavily.

20 MR. WARREN: Your Honor, I am not speaking  
21 about that.

22 THE PRESIDENT: Can they enforce agreements?  
23 It is quite irrelevant to show that if Japan was an  
24 aggressor, was an invader, we will say, that she was  
25 able to compel these people to make treaties with her,

CHING

CROSS

1 and that she lost heavily. Those things are quite  
2 beside the question that arises here.

3 MR. WARREN: If your Honor please, I think  
4 you entirely misapprehend my questioning. The United  
5 States, Great Britain, and other powers had in China  
6 at the same time -- after the Boxer Rebellion we had  
7 our nationals there, our business interests that we  
8 were protecting, and so was Japan. So if great stress  
9 is laid on the fact, if it please your Honor, by the  
10 prosecution in their exhibits, that Japan had more  
11 soldiers than any other nation, by the same token I  
12 feel that I have a right to show, on cross-examination,  
13 in the face of this witness's explanation, which your  
14 Honor has required me to let him make, that Japan like-  
15 wise had more nationals and owned more property interests  
16 than the other nations, and it took a greater police  
17 power to protect them than any other nation. That is  
18 all I am trying to show; that is all I am asking this  
19 witness. He knows it; he knows it very well.

20 THE PRESIDENT: So long as you can rest your  
21 cross-examination on treaties not in question here --  
22 those made following the Boxer Rebellion -- well, you  
23 are within your rights.

24 COLONEL MORROW.

25 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I believe

CHING

CROSS

1 the witness ought to be allowed to have translated  
2 to him in Chinese these remarks of counsel that he  
3 may follow the trend.

4 THE PRESIDENT: No, I do not agree with you.  
5 This is a convenient break. We will recess  
6 now for fifteen minutes.

7 (Whereupon, at 1445, a recess was  
8 taken until 1500, after which the proceedings  
9 were resumed as follows:)

10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



CHING

CROSS

G  
O  
L  
D  
B  
E  
R  
G  
&  
B  
A  
R  
T  
O  
N

1 THE PRESIDENT: Dr. KIYOSE.

2 DR. KIYOSE: Mr. President, after having  
3 been listening to the testimony made by the witness,  
4 I have noticed that there is a little difference in  
5 the translations. Among the defense counsel, there  
6 are a few of us who understand a little Chinese. And  
7 from this knowledge we can see that, here again, there  
8 is a slight difference in the translations. In the  
9 case of a letter being translated into Japanese, we  
10 have always had monitors to supervise the accuracy  
11 of the interpretation. However, unfortunately, in  
12 the case of the Chinese, we have not been favored  
13 with such a provision. Perhaps that is the reason  
14 why we are not entirely satisfied.

15 LANGUAGE SECTION CHIEF: Mr. President,  
16 we have a new setup here adding one more interpreter  
17 taking the question from the prosecution and taking  
18 the witness' answer, translating witness' answer into  
19 English. We have two interpreters here to improve  
20 the interpretation to be carried out and they will  
21 monitor each other.

22 THE PRESIDENT: Well, as I explained before,  
23 all this interpretation of every word is not required  
24 in the interests of justice. It is required in the  
25 interests of propaganda. That is the whole point.

CHING

CROSS

1 This elaborate system of interpreting every word  
2 does not obtain in any national court. We try mur-  
3 derers there. We try men who cannot speak the  
4 English language, but we do not have all of this  
5 interpreting. I would like the Japanese to under-  
6 stand that. The Charter really is mostly concerned  
7 with the Japanese people understanding what is happen-  
8 ing in this Court. It is not required in the interests  
9 of justice. However, we will do our best. We will  
10 try to carry out the Charter but at present it  
11 seems Dr. KIYOSE, that your objection is not well  
12 supported.

13 DR. KIYOSE: Mr. President, I respect your  
14 esteemed opinion. Unless there is a very great dif-  
15 ference in the whole meaning, we do not wish to raise  
16 any objections. But, inasmuch as the present witness  
17 is a very important one, and his testimony will conse-  
18 quently have a very important bearing on the outcome  
19 of the trials, we are raising this point. If, however,  
20 we are reluctant and we shall not raise any points  
21 which we can consider to be minor in importance.

22 THE MONITOR: The one point to be added on  
23 this is that "We regret to have judges, Mr. President  
24 and the other judges, receive wrong impressions  
25 because of the translation. That is why we are raising

1 this problem. However, we will not quibble over  
2 words or usage of words. We would like the substantial  
3 meaning of the translation to be accurate. That is  
4 all."

5 MR. PRESIDENT: We appreciate your attitude,  
6 Dr. KIYOSE. We will do our best with the talent we  
7 have.

8 DR. KIYOSE: As it has occurred just now,  
9 even in the case of the Japanese interpretation we  
10 had to have it repeated before the real significance  
11 could be brought out. In the case of the Chinese  
12 it would be, -- this difference would become more  
13 marked.

14 THE MONITOR: "The danger of this procedure  
15 is that we do not have Chinese monitors. Therefore, if  
16 we do have monitors, I think it can be corrected.

17 THE PRESIDENT: I have never known monitors  
18 in any court but this.

19 Yes, Col. Warren.

20 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, the only  
21 question that I have had raised with reference to the  
22 interpretation is that the new interpreter, I am sure  
23 he has no ulterior motives in mind at all, but on  
24 several occasions he has conferred with the witness  
25 either in further explanation of the question or some

CHING

CROSS

1 other matter and some of the American counsel have  
2 objected. I would ask the Tribunal to caution him  
3 on that point. I realize he is doing the best he  
4 can for us but that might become an important factor  
5 in changing the meaning of an answer.

6 THE PRESIDENT: Now I have tried scores of  
7 cases with interpreters and my experience was and  
8 is that interpreters and witnesses frequently, if  
9 not invariably, question one another to a great ex-  
10 tent, at great length.

11 And I would like that to go on record that  
12 I have noticed here today nothing unusual in the  
13 conduct of the interpreter and the witness.

14 MR. WARREN: I was expressing, your Honor,  
15 what has been conveyed to me and I will proceed with  
16 the cross-examination.

17 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

18 BY MR. WARREN:

19 Q General, sir, at the beginning of July,  
20 1937, is it not true that in addition to Japan that  
21 the United States, Great Britain and France also had  
22 troops stationed in Northern China?

23 A Yes.

24 Q Is it not also true that they had trouble  
25 with Japanese -- I mean Chinese banditry as well as

1 the Japanese?

2 A No.

3 Q I can very well see where that question  
4 may have been confusing in the manner I put it. I  
5 will place it this way.

6 Is it not true that the French, English and  
7 Americans who were stationed in Northern Japan at  
8 that time had trouble with bandits? I mean North  
9 China.

10 A I have never heard of that.

11 Q Were you in the vicinity at that time?

12 A I was in Peiping.

13 Q And you never heard of trouble between  
14 the French, the Americans and the English with Japan-  
15 ese -- I mean Chinese bandits as a result of brigand-  
16 dage there?

17 A I have never heard of that; neither had  
18 I received any reports from any of these foreign  
19 consulates or embassies, Great Britain or American  
20 or French authorities.

21 Q Now with reference to the statement in  
22 the second part of paragraph A-1 of the Prologue  
23 of your Factual Account of July 7th Incident, you  
24 state in substance that all the policies of the  
25 local authorities in several different places were

CHING

CROSS

1 formulated and carried out in conformity with  
2 instructions and laws proclaimed by the National  
3 Government and that they were interfered with by the  
4 Japanese and then you state: "For example, the  
5 election of representatives of the People's Congress,  
6 the concentrated military training of all college  
7 students, were considered by the Japanese aggressors  
8 as measures inconsistent with the status of special  
9 area."

10 In what manner were the Japanese aggressors  
11 at that time?

12 A Regarding the election of representatives  
13 to the People's Congress, Japanese by the name of  
14 TAKAHASHI from the Japanese Embassy had approached  
15 Mr. Hsiao-Chengying and myself to stop this election.  
16 At that time he induced us by saying that if we re-  
17 frained from putting on the election and if we dis-  
18 obeyed the orders issued by the Central Government,  
19 the Japanese Government will be able to help the  
20 Hopei China Political Council politically and economi-  
21 cally.

22 Q General, I am speaking -- General, sir,  
23 perhaps I misinterpret your use of the word "aggressors".  
24 Do you mean to convey that up until that time they  
25 were actively participating in an aggressive war

CHING

CROSS

1 against you or were they aggressive in some other  
2 manner?

3 A Yes.

4 Q Is it not true that the Japanese objected  
5 to propaganda being taught in the schools against  
6 Japanese and other foreign persons and that they  
7 did object strenuously to the training, intensive and  
8 concentrated training, I mean, of students in the  
9 military arts along with the propaganda that was  
10 being given to them?

11 A The Japanese, on the pretext that this  
12 concentrated military training in the universities  
13 and colleges instils anti-Japanese ideas, demanded  
14 that these be abolished.

15 Addition, please. However, the military  
16 training we had given to our students was purely  
17 for self-defense reasons.

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

CHING

CROSS

M  
o  
r  
s  
e  
&  
A  
b  
r  
a  
m

1 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, I  
2 would like to request the Tribunal to respectfully  
3 request this witness to answer my questions without  
4 giving his conclusions that on a pretext of this kind  
5 or a pretext of the other, he can answer these questions  
6 without. I don't care for his conclusions, and your  
7 Honor, once an answer is in, does not permit us to  
8 strike it. I feel we should be at least afforded  
9 the protection of an admonishment to the witness not  
10 to state conclusions not based on facts, which he  
11 has given to the Tribunal. I feel that the Tribunal  
12 can well pass upon the question of whether it was a  
13 pretext or not. If he will just state the facts to  
14 the Tribunal, that is all I want him to do..

15 THE PRESIDENT: Well, the whole of his exam-  
16 ination in chief consists of conclusions, if I  
17 recollect rightly. It is not the kind of evidence  
18 we would allow in chief if he gave his evidence from  
19 the box. But I will ask him to confine himself to  
20 simple answers to the questions, to make sure if he  
21 can that his answers do not extend beyond the ques-  
22 tions.

23 THE WITNESS: I have never overstepped the  
24 bounds of the answer.

25 MR. WARREN: Thank you, General.



CHING

CROSS

1 THE PRESIDENT: He may always explain an  
2 answer if he thinks fit.

3 Q Did the Japanese, or did they not, inform you  
4 that they felt that the intensive military training,  
5 together with the propaganda being disseminated to  
6 the students against the Japanese and other nationals  
7 foreign to China were inconsistent with the treaty  
8 commitments with China with reference to their status  
9 in the special areas?

10 THE PRESIDENT: Well, you assume the fact  
11 or beg the question, whatever way you like to put it,  
12 in that interrogation.

13 MR. WARREN: Well, your Honor, I thought  
14 maybe I could get a direct answer. I am sorry.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Well, let him try to answer.

16 INTERPRETER: The witness said that he didn't  
17 quite get the question.

18 Q I will reframe it. In your statement quoting  
19 you state repeatedly Japanese opened negotiations and  
20 interfered with such administration but all the  
21 inducements and threats failed. Is it not a fact that  
22 you were approached many, many times by the Japanese  
23 representatives to negotiate on matters that they  
24 considered objectionable to their special status under  
25 their treaty obligations and rights?

CHING

CROSS

1           A    According to the Ho-UMEZU Agreement, the  
2 Chinese troops -- part of the Chinese troops were  
3 withdrawn and some of the political workers attached  
4 in the army were also withdrawn. Other than that there  
5 is nothing that should be considered objectionable  
6 by the Japanese. Also the office of the political  
7 party were withdrawn by the agreement between General  
8 Ho and UMEZU.

9           MR. WARREN: It is obvious that there was  
10 a wrong interpretation of my question given to the  
11 witness.

12                     (Whereupon, the last question was  
13 read by the official court reporter.)

14           INTERPRETER: The question will have to be  
15 re-translated.

16           The witness said that the Japanese funda-  
17 mentally had never acquired any special rights or  
18 status. They were forcefully trying to get the  
19 autonomy of North China which General Sung Cheyuan  
20 refused.

21           Q    Is it not true that the Chinese refused to  
22 negotiate or to cooperate with the Japanese on a  
23 single proposition that they came to the Chinese with  
24 prior to the Incident of July 7 or the Marco Polo  
25 Bridge Incident?

CHING

CROSS

1           A    The Chinese government has never refused to  
2 negotiate with the Japanese only on the main issue,  
3 that is, disintegration of North China from China  
4 proper. This issue we refused to talk.

5           THE PRESIDENT: I suggest, Colonel Warren,  
6 with respect that your questions are longer than they  
7 need be and are creating much of the difficulty.

8           MR. WARREN: You are probably right sir.  
9 I also feel that this witness is adopting a somewhat  
10 stubborn attitude in his answers also, but I will try  
11 to do better with the questions.

12          Q    With reference to paragraph 3 of your pro-  
13 logue, you state that "the 29th Army was the main  
14 force, which had its garrisons all over Hopei, Chahar,  
15 Peiping and Tientsin. At the time of the Incident,  
16 the 37th Division under the command of General Feng  
17 Chi-An was stationed in the suburbs of Peiping."  
18 What was the exact date that -- Just a moment.

19          THE PRESIDENT: I don't know how the inter-  
20 preters are going to pick up that.

21          MR. WARREN: They are not going to put up  
22 that, sir. I am trying to ask a question for some-  
23 body else, your Honor, and I have it messed up myself.  
24 He says he will ask his own question.

25          Q    Now, General, sir, you go into great length

re

CHING

CROSS

1 with reference to the Marco Polo Bridge Incident,  
2 stating the Japanese so-called aggression, and you  
3 also state that you ended with an agreement. What  
4 was the date of that agreement to cease hostilities?

5 A As far as I remember it was on the 10th of  
6 July.

7 Q Now later you state that hostilities were  
8 again resumed on the 14th of July but you do not go  
9 into detail. Why did you not go into detail with  
10 reference to the commencement of hostilities on the  
11 14th, or the re-commencement?

12 A If I have gone into details of the re-com-  
13 mencement of hostilities you may think it will be  
14 rather uninteresting to you again.

15 Q The truth is, isn't it, General, sir, that  
16 hostilities were re-commenced by the Chinese and not  
17 the Japanese, that is, that the Chinese fired the first  
18 shots on July 14?

19 A It was the Japanese who fired the first shot.

20 Q You deny, then, that the resumption of  
21 hostilities was commenced by the Chinese and not the  
22 Japanese?

23 A Yes.

24 Q General, sir, is it not a fact that the  
25 Central Chinese Government had very little control

CHING

CROSS

1 over the outlying provinces and garrisons and especial-  
2 ly the one that had the trouble with the Japanese on  
3 July 7?

4 A All these places were listening to the  
5 orders of the central government.

6 Q I understand, General, sir, they were  
7 listening, but were they following them?

8 A Is there any difference between listening to  
9 and following? Can you give me a definition of what  
10 is listening to and what is following listening to?

11 MR. WARREN: Will the interpreters please  
12 do their job down there?

13 INTERPRETER: We are doing our job.

14 Q I will explain. General, sir, as your  
15 answer came to me it came to me that you were merely  
16 listening to orders and that does not mean necessarily  
17 that an order will be obeyed. What I want to know is  
18 were the orders issued by the central government being  
19 promptly obeyed by the officers in command of the  
20 various battalions or whatever regiments or troops  
21 you had out there?

22 A Probably the question you ask is due to the  
23 fact you don't understand the system of the military  
24 command.

25 MONITOR: Channel of command.

CHING

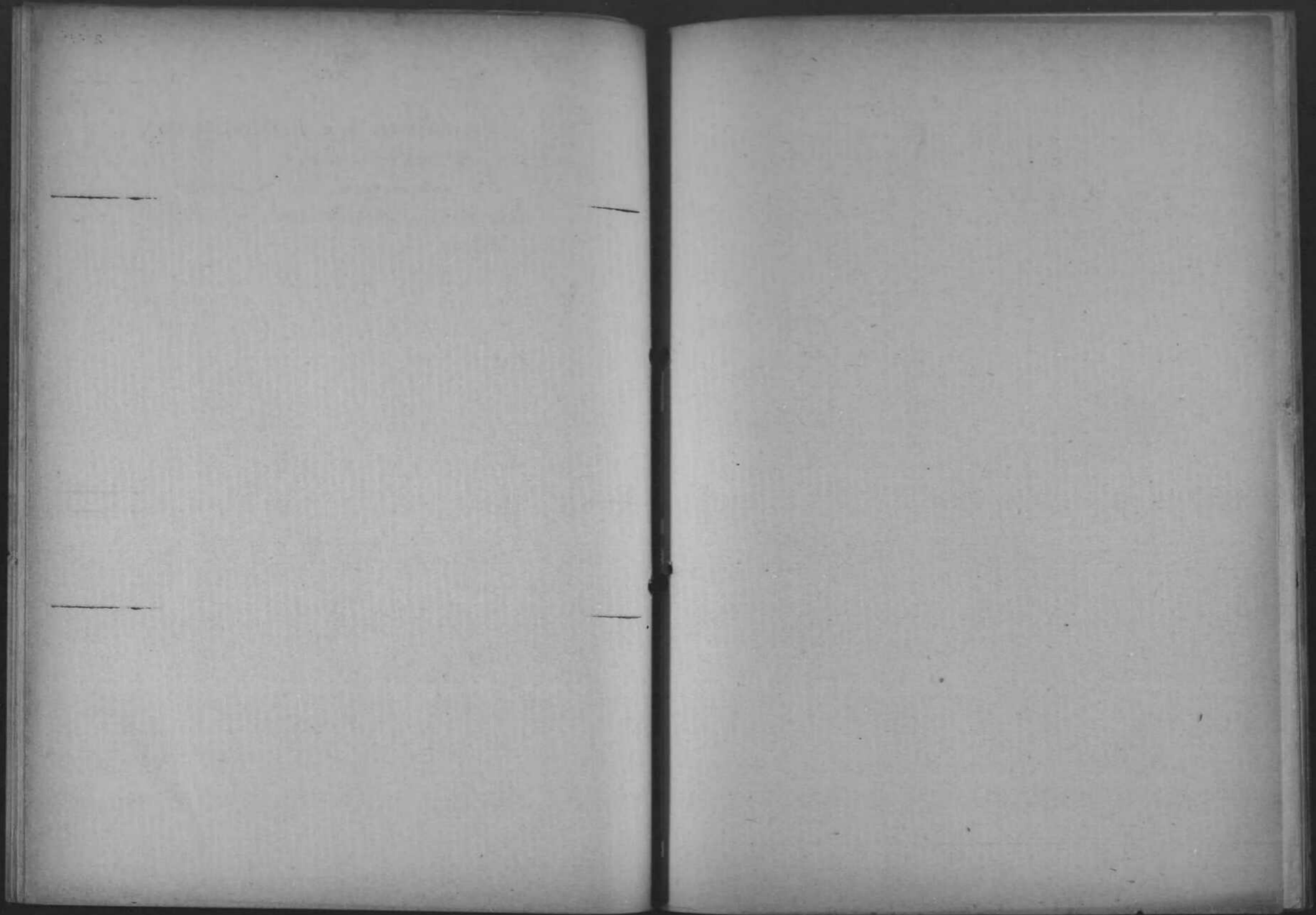
CROSS

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

THE PRESIDENT: We will adjourn now until  
half past nine tomorrow morning.

(Whereupon, at 1600, an adjourn-  
ment was taken until Wednesday, 24 July 1946,  
at 0930.)

-----



Corrected.

24 Jul 46<sup>51</sup>

21.7.24



24 JULY 1946

I N D E X  
of  
WITNESSES

Prosecution's Witnesses

Ching Teh-chun

<u>Direct</u>	<u>Cross</u>
	2420
	to
	2476

I N D E X  
of  
EXHIBITS

( no exhibits )

1 Wednesday, 24 July, 1946

2 - - -

3  
4 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
5 FOR THE FAR EAST  
6 Court House of the Tribunal  
7 War Ministry Building  
8 Tokyo, Japan

9 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
10 at 0930.

11 - - -

12 **Appearances:**

13 For the Tribunal, same as before.

14 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

15 For the Defense Section, same as before.

16 - - -

17  
18 (English to Japanese, Japanese to  
19 English, English to Chinese, and Chinese to  
20 English interpretation was made by the  
21 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International Military  
2 Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: All the accused are present  
4 except OKAWA, who is represented by counsel.

5 Does any counsel desire to mention any matter?

6 Colonel Warren. Colonel, yesterday I misap-  
7 prehended a question you put, and I made an adverse com-  
8 ment which was not warranted. I regret that.

9 - - -

10 CHING TEH - CHUN, called as a witness on  
11 behalf of the prosecution, resumed the stand and  
12 testified as follows:

13 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

14 BY MR. WARREN:

15 Q I believe the witness was answering a question  
16 which he had not completed at our recess yesterday after-  
17 noon.

18 A Will you please repeat your last question of  
19 yesterday afternoon?

20 MR. WARREN: Will the reporter read the ques-  
21 tion back to the witness?

22 OFFICIAL COURT REPORTER: Mr. Warren, I am  
23 afraid we have not got the last question, as we assumed  
24 that the transcript was delivered to you by this morning.

25 Q Reading from the record, the question was:

1 "I will explain. General, sir, as your answer came to  
2 me it came to me that you were merely listening to  
3 orders and that does not mean necessarily that an order  
4 will be obeyed. What I want to know is were the orders  
5 issued by the central government being promptly obeyed  
6 by the officers in command of the various battalions or  
7 whatever regiments or troops you had out there?" You  
8 had started to answer in this manner: "Probably the  
9 question you asked is due to the fact you don't under-  
10 stand the system of the military command." And the  
11 monitor said: "Channel of command," at which time we  
12 adjourned.

13 A The central government order was surely and  
14 suddenly being listened to and followed by the local  
15 government. When I said that you don't understand --  
16 when I said, when you put the question -- the question  
17 you put is probably due to the fact that you don't under-  
18 stand the channels of military command. Is that when you  
19 asked me whether one command -- one battalion command or  
20 regiment or troops you have ordered would probably obey  
21 the government?

22 Q I take it then, General, sir, that you mean to  
23 express that when Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek issued  
24 an order to one of his subordinates that it was promptly  
25 obeyed and placed into effect?

CHING

CROSS

1 A Yes, it is so. Of course, so far as procedure  
2 is concerned, it is not that the order will be given  
3 direct by the Generalissimo to the local command or  
4 regiment or battalion.

5 Q I am sorry that I confused you, General. I  
6 am very well aware of the chain of command, but on  
7 page 6 of your affidavit you made this statement:  
8 "Some time before this, repeated telegrams from our  
9 Supreme Commander," and then in parentheses, "General-  
10 issimo Chiang," "ordered General Sung, Chairman of  
11 the Hopei-Chahar Political Council to proceed to  
12 Paoting (in southern Hopei) and to direct operations  
13 from there."

14 General, sir, Sung now acted as directed by  
15 these orders. Why was it necessary for Generalissimo  
16 Chiang Kai-shek to send repeated telegraphic orders to  
17 his subordinates before they were obeyed?

18 A The order the Generalissimo sent to us was  
19 exhortative in nature. It ordered us to leave Peiping  
20 and to proceed to Fu-ping at the opportune moment.  
21 The order is purely exhortative in nature and is not  
22 a strict command.

23 Q General, sir, is it not true that throughout  
24 the army of which you are a member, that the generals  
25 have a certain autonomy of their own, unknown to

CHING

CROSS

1 military commands and channels in any other civilized  
2 nation?

3 A Do you mean to ask that the Chinese Army has  
4 its own peculiar characteristics, different from other  
5 armies of civilized nations -- armies of other civilized  
6 nations?

7 THE PRESIDENT: If he heard the question he  
8 should answer yes or no.

9 A The Chinese Army -- the nature and character  
10 of the Chinese Army is the same as any army of any  
11 other civilized nation. They don't have any autonomy  
12 character, as you said.

13 Q General, sir, are you acquainted with the  
14 Lytton Report?

15 A I don't know.

16 Q The Lytton Report is a report made by a com-  
17 mission of inquiry appointed by the League of Nations  
18 following the Manchurian Incident, which you have re-  
19 ferred to on several occasions.

20 A It is not that I don't know of this Lytton  
21 Report. It is that that report concerns with the Man-  
22 churian Affairs only, which is not within the scope of  
23 which I am going to testify.

24 Q General, sir, I am going to read from page 16  
25 of the Lytton Report, starting with the second sentence

CHING

CROSS

1 in the last paragraph on that page, which refers to  
2 the commencement of your political party in China.  
3 Quoting: "The party was now ready to put into opera-  
4 tion its schemes of political and economic reconstruc-  
5 tion, but was prevented from doing so by internal  
6 dissensions, the periodical revolt of various  
7 Generals with personal armies, and the menace of  
8 Communism. In fact, the Central Government had  
9 repeatedly to fight for its very existence."

10 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, I should  
11 like to have the record show what date he refers to.

12 MR. WARREN: They introduced the Lytton Re-  
13 port, your Honor.

14 Q Now General, sir, do you know of any other  
15 nation that has generals with personal armies of  
16 their own?

17 A I don't think there is any nation whose  
18 generals have their own private troops or armies.

19

20

21

22

25

24

25

CHING

CROSS

G  
O  
D  
D  
E  
R  
G  
&  
B  
A  
R  
T  
O  
N

1 Q Now, General, sir, is it not true that from  
2 1927, the date that the Lytton Report makes refer-  
3 ence to on the quotation, to the very present time  
4 that Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek has not been able  
5 to enforce his orders with his subordinate generals  
6 in many instances if they did not desire to obey  
7 those orders?

8 A I am feeling that the question you are  
9 putting to me is having very little relevancy to  
10 the question at issue.

11 THE PRESIDENT: The witness must answer.

12 A (Continuing): The orders issued by the  
13 Generalissimo will surely and naturally be thoroughly  
14 executed by the various departments and troops and  
15 commands.

16 Q General, sir, reading from page 19 of the  
17 Lytton Report, it is the last two sentences in the  
18 second paragraph on that page. I am quoting now.  
19 "The transfer of a commander from one army to another  
20 by order of the Central Government is, in many cases,  
21 impossible. The danger of civil war must continue  
22 to exist so long as the Central Government lacks  
23 the material means to make its authority swiftly and  
24 permanently felt all over the country."

25 General, sir, do you deny that such statement



CHING

CROSS

1 made by the Lytton Commission to the League of  
2 Nations is not true?

3 A In principle, I agree with the report  
4 made by the Lytton Commission, but that report  
5 was compiled in 1931 while the incident to which  
6 I am testifying, that is, the July 7th Incident,  
7 happened in 1937, which was several years later.

8 THE PRESIDENT: I suppose you are testing  
9 his credibility on that report, Colonel Warren;  
10 subject to that, there is not much occasion to  
11 cross-examine extensively on it.

12 MR. WARREN: I had another matter in mind,  
13 but I am going to terminate this phase of my cross-  
14 examination in a very few questions, your Honor.

15 Q Is it not true, General, sir, that the same  
16 condition prevailed at the time of the incident  
17 about which you first testified and that it prevails  
18 to this very good day?

19 A Well, while the facts presented by the  
20 Lytton Report might be true, might be factually  
21 true, I would like to point out that during the time  
22 the July 7th Incident occurred, the peace and order  
23 in the area that was under the jurisdiction of  
24 Hopei-Chahar Political Council was well maintained  
25 and the Army were well under the Central Government's

CHING

CROSS

1 control.

2 THE CHINESE MONITOR: And no Communism  
3 threatened either.

4 Q The fact still remains, General, sir, is  
5 it not true, that Japan had no single responsible  
6 government in China with which they could treat  
7 with reference to the safeguarding of their nationals  
8 and of their property rights which they had gained  
9 by treaty?

10 A That is not a fact. In so far as the  
11 protection of Japanese property and persons is  
12 concerned, the local government is taking full charge  
13 and has been taking full charge.

14 Q General, sir, that is precisely what I  
15 wish to clarify. Were the Japanese forced to treat  
16 with a local government or could they or did they  
17 have a responsible national government in China with  
18 which they could treat at that time?

19 A The Japanese was playing a multiple policy  
20 of diplomacy. They were on one hand negotiating  
21 with the local government while, on the other, they  
22 were negotiating with the Central Government in  
23 Nanking.

24 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "By their ambassador."

25 Q Is it not true that because of local autonomy

CHING

CROSS

1 which existed in various parts of China that it was  
2 necessary for Japan or any other nation in China  
3 to do exactly as Japan did in order to protect her  
4 nationals?

5 A No. There was never anything like autonomy  
6 existing as you said but it is true that the Japanese,  
7 that Japan was trying to create some sort of autonomy  
8 out of the situation.

9 Do you want me to give you a factual example to  
10 illustrate that England, America or France has never  
11 done anything like what Japan did?

12 THE INTERPRETER: Correction, please. The  
13 witness put it in plain statement. It is not a  
14 question. He said he wants to give a factual ex-  
15 ample to illustrate that.

16 MR. WARREN: As far as I am personally con-  
17 cerned, I don't care to hear it. Does the Court  
18 desire to hear it?

19 THE PRESIDENT: He seemed to be making a  
20 statement and not a question to you. I may misap-  
21 prehend what he said but he seemed to say, in effect,  
22 that England, France and the other countries did not  
23 do what Japan did.

24 A (Continuing): As far as when local govern-  
25 ment was then concerned, we had never had very much

CHING

CROSS

1 diplomatic negotiations with either France or  
2 England or America.

3 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "Except with Japan."

4 MR. WARREN: Shall I proceed, your Honor?

5 THE PRESIDENT: Yes, proceed.  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

A  
b  
r  
a  
m  
&  
M  
o  
r  
s  
e

1 MR. WARREN: With reference to local autonomy,  
2 I desire to read to you General, sir, from the Lytton  
3 Report, on page 127, the first paragraph, which makes  
4 reference to the dispute over the Mukden Incident, to  
5 which you have referred. Quoting: "The dispute has  
6 arisen between two States, both Members of the  
7 League, concerning a territory the size of France and  
8 Germany combined, in which both claim to have rights  
9 and interests, only some of which are clearly de-  
10 fined by international law; a territory which, al-  
11 though legally an integral part of China, had a  
12 sufficiently autonomous character to carry on direct  
13 negotiations with Japan on the matters which lay at  
14 the root of this conflict."

15 MR. WARREN: Did he answer.

16 THE PRESIDENT: You did not complete your  
17 question.

18 MR. WARREN: Oh, I am sorry; I thought I  
19 had, your Honor.

20 Q (Continuing) Do you disagree with the Lytton  
21 Report, with reference to the power of local govern-  
22 ments within their own autonomy?

23 A While I admit the Lytton Report, in broad  
24 principle, I want to remind you that that report, as  
25 I said, was compiled in 1931, and what I am testifying

CHING

CROSS

1 to is the event that happened on July 7, 1937. The  
2 Pearl Harbor case happened in 1940, or 1941. Now  
3 it is 1946. You will have to pay some attention to  
4 the time element.

5 Now I think it is my turn to put you a  
6 question.

7 THE PRESIDENT: We do not want any questions  
8 from the witness. The witness may turn his question  
9 into a statement.

10 Q General, sir, I shall ask you in what manner  
11 the situation has changed with reference to the con-  
12 tinuous autonomy of local governments in China from  
13 1931 to July 24, 1946.

14 A Ever since September 18, 1931, up to 1932  
15 winter, or spring of 1933, when Japan occupied the  
16 Province of Jehol, and until the establishment of  
17 the Hopei-Chahar Political Council, the local govern-  
18 ment was always listening to and following the orders  
19 of the Chinese National Government.

20 INTERPRETER: Correction: since the estab-  
21 lishment of Hopei and Chahar Political Council, the  
22 North China Government, or the local government in  
23 North China, has been obeying and following the in-  
24 structions and orders from the Central Government.  
25 There is no autonomy existing in North China.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Not even at the present date?

2 A The present situation is, of course, a little  
3 bit complex and complicated.

4 Q Was not the then present situation at the  
5 time of the Marco Polo Incident a little complex?

6 THE PRESIDENT: That expression, "a little  
7 complex," renders your question practically valueless.

8 MR. WARREN: Well, it may, your Honor, but  
9 the witness used the same term and I want him to  
10 explain. This witness has consistently avoided my  
11 questions.

12 THE PRESIDENT: At least, you should be  
13 specific and not follow bad examples.

14 MR. WARREN: That's right. I am going to  
15 get off of that subject at the present time and skip  
16 to another one, your Honor.

17 Q Yesterday, General, sir, in the cross-examina-  
18 tion, I asked you if Japan had not suffered more loss  
19 as a result of lawlessness in Japan, both to her  
20 nationals and property, than any other nation. You  
21 eventually answered that she had not. Permit a  
22 correction, will you? I said China when I meant  
23 Japan, that Japan had lost more. Does that question  
24 make sense yet? I will repeat the question, your  
25 Honor. I have used the wrong word to correct it.

CHING

CROSS

1 I don't know where I made it.

2 THE PRESIDENT: This is a convenient break.

3 We will recess now for fifteen minutes.

4 (Whereupon, at 1045, a recess was  
5 taken until 1100, after which the proceedings  
6 were resumed as follows:)

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25



CHING

CROSS

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now  
2 resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Warren.

4 MR. WARREN: Thank you, sir.

5 BY MR. WARREN (Continuing):

6 Q General, sir, yesterday in answer to one of  
7 my interrogations you stated that Japan had not suf-  
8 fered more losses as a result of banditry in China  
9 than any other nation. I desire to read to you from  
10 the Lytton Report, on page 23, the third paragraph  
11 and the first sentence of the fourth paragraph.

12 "So far as Japan is China's nearest neighbour  
13 and largest customer, she has suffered more than any  
14 other Power from the lawless conditions described  
15 in this chapter. Over two-thirds of the foreign  
16 residents in China are Japanese, and the number of  
17 Koreans in Manchuria is estimated at about 800,000.  
18 She has more nationals, therefore, than any other  
19 Power, who would suffer if they were made amenable to  
20 Chinese law, justice and taxation under present  
21 conditions.

22 "Japan felt it impossible to satisfy Chinese  
23 aspirations so long as satisfactory safeguards to take  
24 the place of her Treaty rights could not be hoped for."

25 Do you now desire to change your answer to

W  
h  
a  
l  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

CHING

CROSS

1 the previous question, or do you wish to state that  
2 the Lytton Report on that question is inaccurate?

3 A I want neither to amend what I have said  
4 yesterday, because what I said yesterday was true;  
5 nor do I deny the Lytton Report, because the Lytton  
6 Report has its own time element involved. If there  
7 is no time element involved in the Lytton Report,  
8 then would you uphold the statement that Korea has  
9 about 800,000 Koreans inhabited in Manchuria then as  
10 now?

11 THE PRESIDENT: Do you propose to refer fur-  
12 ther to the Lytton Report, Colonel Warren?

13 MR. WARREN: There is very much on that same  
14 question, but that is the meat of it, your Honor. I  
15 see no necessity. He stated one thing yesterday; the  
16 Lytton Report is diametrically opposite to that. This  
17 is, as I understand it, his Government's official  
18 version, which he denied yesterday. I want to see now  
19 whether he is going to repudiate the official version  
20 of his Government, or whether he is going to change  
21 his answer.

22 THE PRESIDENT: Instead of reading long  
23 passages you may be able to paraphrase.

24 MR. WARREN: Oh, I am sorry, sir. I  
25 entirely misinterpreted your Honor's question. This

CHING

CROSS

1 is the last question I will ask from the Lytton Re-  
2 port. I am through with it on this one.

3 But I should like to ask the Tribunal to  
4 require this witness to answer that question.

5 THE PRESIDENT: I think the answer is suf-  
6 ficient for our purposes.

7 MR. WARREN: Your Honor, he has never  
8 answered the question. He says, "I do not repudiate  
9 the Lytton Report, and I do not change my answer."

10 THE PRESIDENT: Well, that is his answer, you  
11 see. We cannot improve on that.

12 Q General, sir, in your affidavit, on the last  
13 page -- this is now prosecution exhibit No. 198 to  
14 which I am referring -- you make the statement:

15 "But the instigator at the very beginning of  
16 Japanese aggression in North China was DOHIHARA, Kenji,  
17 the same man who instigated the Mukden Incident of  
18 September 18, 1931."

19 Without supporting facts your statement stands  
20 as a conclusion. Will you give us the facts upon  
21 which you base that conclusion? If you have no facts,  
22 will you so state.

23 A This statement of mine was concerned mainly  
24 with what happened on July 7, 1937. This last para-  
25 graph is not the main theme of the statement.

CHING

CROSS

1 As to DOHIHARA's responsibility for the out-  
2 break of Mukden Incident, there was one important  
3 witness who had already given his statement testifying  
4 to that. And the fact that DOHIHARA was the responsi-  
5 ble figure in Mukden Incident is practically known  
6 to every one of Chinese population.

7 Q General, sir, if you have a single fact to  
8 base up that conclusion -- I mean, to back up that  
9 conclusion, will you please state that one single fact  
10 to this Tribunal?

11 A I have already supplied you with the answer  
12 when the previous defense counsel was asking me the  
13 same question. That time I said that although DOHI-  
14 HARA was then not in Mukden, but the fact that he was  
15 not in Mukden does not exonerate him from not being  
16 responsible for the incident.

17 Q General, sir, that is not a fact. That is a  
18 conclusion. Will you please tell this Tribunal, if  
19 you have facts, what they are. If you do not have  
20 them, please tell them you do not have the facts.

21 A I have many facts to support my statement.  
22 Do you want me to enumerate the facts one by one right  
23 here in this courtroom?

24 Q General, sir, I have asked for facts in the  
25 courtroom. I would like for you to state those facts

CHING

CROSS

1 to the Tribunal here in the courtroom.

2 A DOHIHARA was a long resident in China, and  
 3 had made a great number of friends, associates. A  
 4 week prior to the happening of the September 18 inci-  
 5 dent many friends, mutual friends -- this means a few  
 6 friends between the General and DOHIHARA -- many mutual  
 7 friends had told General -- told me, that DOHIHARA is  
 8 about going to Manchuria to embark on some big project.

9  
 10  
 11  
 12  
 13  
 14  
 15  
 16  
 17  
 18  
 19  
 20  
 21  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25

CHING

CROSS

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 Q General, sir, I have asked for facts. Will  
2 you state the names or some of the names of those  
3 friends of yours, where the conversation took place,  
4 at what time, and under what circumstances?

5 A There was a certain Mr. Chang and a Japanese  
6 by the name of SHIBAYAMA, five days before the happen-  
7 ing of the Mukden Incident, held a conversation in a  
8 place known as Chungshan Park in Peiping.

9 Q Will you please state specifically what they  
10 told you?

11 A What they told me was the Air Marshal,  
12 Chang-Hsuehlian, could not cooperate with Japan;  
13 therefore, he should be thrown out.

14 Q Is that all they told you?

15 A Of course, they told me a little more. They  
16 said that the Japanese Government had an overall pro-  
17 ject and that DOHIMARA and his people are working on  
18 this project. I told them that since Chang-Hsuehlian  
19 is now following -- obeying the order of the Central  
20 Government, I could not very well do this -- I didn't  
21 approve the plan.

22 Q What is the full name of this one certain Mr.  
23 Chang and the Japanese by the name of SHIBAYAMA? What  
24 are their full names?

25 A I cannot recall their full names.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q General, maybe we can shorten this by asking  
2 you this question: Do you have any personal knowledge  
3 of any facts that would lead you to make the state-  
4 ment that I questioned you about?

5 A Now, I can tell you that DOHIHARA was the  
6 responsible figure in effecting the outbreak of the  
7 July 7 Incident. I said that because I was person-  
8 ally in the scene and handling the negotiations with  
9 him. As to the outbreak of the Mukden Incident, I  
10 can tell you, on top of what I was told by that cer-  
11 tain Mr. Chang and others, about that conversation  
12 I have just told you. I have learned it from other  
13 friends and from papers, too -- newspapers.

14 Q You have testified about the July 7 Incident,  
15 but then I take it that you have no personal knowl-  
16 edge of anything concerning the Mukden Incident,  
17 isn't that correct?

18 A As I have told you, I am here as a witness  
19 testifying to what happened on July 7, 1937. I am  
20 not testifying to what happened on September 18, 1931.

21 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, I feel  
22 that this proceeding could be speeded up tremendous-  
23 ly if the Tribunal would require this witness to  
24 answer questions. He refuses to do it.

25 THE PRESIDENT: The strict, technical

CHING

CROSS

1 position is, if it applies here, that he must answer  
2 all questions relevant to the issue whether he testi-  
3 fied to all these matters in chief or not. But,  
4 surely, you must be satisfied that he has told you all  
5 he knows.

6 MR. WARREN: Your Honor, this witness has  
7 attempted to evade every point upon which impeachment  
8 has been laid -- when he has learned that impeachment  
9 is about to be made. Every consistent statement he  
10 has refused to answer. If the Tribunal is satisfied,  
11 I am satisfied. I don't care to cross-examine him  
12 further. But, I do think these witnesses should be  
13 required to answer questions and not evade answers  
14 like they have been doing.

15 That's all, sir. Thank you very much, sir.

16 THE PRESIDENT: If the Tribunal thought for  
17 one moment that that witness was withholding facts  
18 within his knowledge, we would compel him to answer.

19 Major Blakeney.

20 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

21 BY MAJOR BLAKENEY:

22 Q Mr. Witness, I refer your attention to ex-  
23 hibit No. 199, being your statement on the Northern  
24 Chahar Incident. On the first page of the English  
25 version of this document you speak of the Changpeh



CHING

CROSS

1 Incident.

2 After tracing the negotiations concerning  
3 this Incident, you say that the matter was referred  
4 to the headquarters of the Japanese garrison forces in  
5 Tientsin. On what date was it referred to that head-  
6 quarters?

7 A I cannot recall the exact date, but it is  
8 somewhere around the third day after the happening of  
9 this matter. Originally, this matter should have been  
10 handled and settled by the Japanese Consulate at  
11 Kalgan; but, as the Japanese was trying to aggravate  
12 the matter, so they referred it to the garrison forces  
13 headquarters in Tientsin.

14 Q Did you, yourself, discuss the matter with  
15 the headquarters of the Japanese garrison in Tientsin?

16 A No. I never personally handled the matter  
17 with them. The headquarters -- the garrison head-  
18 quarters in Tientsin sent DOHIHARA as their represent-  
19 ative to Peiping to discuss the matter with me.

20 Q Then, when you said that the matter was  
21 referred to Japanese headquarters in Tientsin, you  
22 mean that it was referred to the Japanese headquart-  
23 ers represented by General DOHIHARA; is that correct?

24 A Yes.

25 Q And that was -- that headquarters represented

CHING

CROSS

1 by General DOHIHARA was the headquarters of the  
2 Japanese North China garrison in Tientsin; is that  
3 correct?

4 A At that time DOHIHARA was assuming double  
5 personality: On one hand he was representing the  
6 Special Service Command of the Japanese Kwantung  
7 Army in Manchuria, and on the other hand he was also  
8 representing the garrison commander in Tientsin --  
9 the Japanese garrison commander in Tientsin.

10 By "Special Service" is meant "Intelligence  
11 Service."

12 Q Are you as sure of that as you are of all  
13 the rest of your testimony?

14 THE PRESIDENT: Witness need not answer.

15 MAJOR BLAKENEY: That's all.

16 MR. HAYASHI: I am HAYASHI, Itsuro, counsel  
17 for the defendant HASHIMOTO, Kingoro.

18 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

19 BY MR. HAYASHI:

20 Q On July 7, 1937, at the time of the outbreak  
21 of the Lukuochiao Incident, what was the strength of  
22 the 37th Division under the command of General Feng-  
23 Chihan?

24 A Approximately fourteen or fifteen thousand  
25 men.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q What was the strength of the 29th Army which  
2 was composed of the 37th Division, the 38th Division,  
3 the 143rd Division, and the 132nd Division?

4 A Approximately sixty thousand men.

5 Q Are you aware that the Chinese Government  
6 issued an order -- a mobilization order on the 9th  
7 of July, 1937?

8 A I never received any order like that.

9 Q Are you aware of the fact that on the 29th  
10 of July the Chinese Government -- China sent a large  
11 army composed of thirty divisions northwards?

12 A What do you mean by "from south"? From  
13 which point do you mean? Pao-Ting -- at Pao-Ting  
14 the Central Government had some troops.

15 Q Are you aware that, on the orders of Gener-  
16 alissimo Chiang Kai-shek' a large army was despatched  
17 toward Lukuo-chiao?

18 A There was no such an order.

19 Q Even if you, yourself, did not personally  
20 receive such an order, are you not aware that General  
21 Chiang did issue such an order?

22 THE MONITOR: I would like to make a  
23 correction here: Instead of "issued an order, do  
24 you know what General Chiang Kai-shek did"?

25 A Prior to 29 of July there was no movement

CHING

CROSS

1 of troops on the part of China at all. But, after  
2 29 of July, when the Japanese troops moved -- marched  
3 into and toward Peiping -- half occupied Peiping --  
4 the Central Government had ordered the Chinese troops  
5 to move from Pao-Ting -- to establish defense north  
6 of Pao-Ting.

7 THE PRESIDENT: We will adjourn now until  
8 half-past one.

9 (Whereupon, at 1200, a recess was  
10 taken.)

11 - - -  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

## AFTERNOON SESSION

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

The Tribunal met, pursuant to recess, at 1330.

MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International Military Tribunal is now resumed.

MR. HAYASHI: I shall continue my cross-examination.

- - -

CHING TEH-CHUN, called as a witness on behalf of the prosecution, resumed the stand and testified as follows:

BY MR. HAYASHI (Continued):

Q Do you know whether the Chinese Government on July 9, 1937, issued a mobilization order, or do you not know?

A I have never received any mobilization order at that time. I was then only at LuKuochiao.

Q I am not asking you whether you received the order or not. I am asking you whether or not you know whether such an order was issued?

A Most probably there wasn't, because if there was I should have received it.

Q Is Mr. Wanglong chai a man to be trusted -- a man of noble character, worthy to be trusted?

A He is one of my inferiors -- he is one of my

CHING

CROSS

1 subordinates. I think he is trustworthy.

2 Q What position did Wanglong chai hold at the  
3 time of the Lukuochiao Incident?

4 A He was then a special commissioner in charge of  
5 three districts then, and concurrently he was the magis-  
6 trate of Wangping District.

7 Q You have stated that an agreement was signed  
8 on July 19, 1937, whereby the -- whereby concerning the  
9 garrisoning of the Marco Polo Bridge and Wangping-Hsien  
10 it was agreed that the 37th Division of the 29th Army,  
11 which was rather hostile to Japan, should be moved to  
12 another area, and that ~~some~~ other division should be  
13 assigned to garrison the above-mentioned area. Is this  
14 correct?

15 THE MONITOR: Correction: Some other unit  
16 instead of division.

17 A It was not on the 19th. It most probably was  
18 the 9th of July there was such a matter.

19 Q Between who and who was this agreement signed?

20 A At that time parties to the negotiation were,  
21 on the part of China, myself and one General Chang Tzu  
22 Chung; and on the part of Japan, the one MATSUI, Com-  
23 mander of the Special Service Command, and another one  
24 whose name I don't quite remember. The agreement was  
25 signed by General Chang Tzu Chung and MATSUI.

CHING

CROSS

1 THE MONITOR: That special service meant  
2 military intelligence command.

3 Q Was General DOHIHARA concerned in any way  
4 with the signing of this agreement?

5 A No.

6 Q Then, do you admit that the 37th Division was  
7 more hostile in feeling toward Japan than the other  
8 divisions?

9 A Speaking of the 29th Army as a whole, if Japan  
10 did not try to invade China, or did not invade China,  
11 the feeling will always be amiable. If Japan -- in the  
12 case of Japan's invasion, the feeling against the  
13 Japanese Army is always unfavorable. This is not the  
14 feeling of the 37th Division alone.

15 Q Does it not then follow that with the signing  
16 of this agreement on the 9th of July, the incident which  
17 had broken out at Lukuochiaow was for the time being  
18 solved?

19 A It was our intent then to execute the agree-  
20 ment which was concluded and then consider as having  
21 the matter settled, but as of the 11th of July the  
22 Japanese Cabinet decided to send more troops and push  
23 forward their project, the fighting resumed.

24 THE MONITOR: Correction: Then the incident  
25 was not considered solved then, but just the agreement

CHING

CROSS

1 was the first step to solve the incident, but later  
2 on Japan marched more troops and the fighting started  
3 all over again.

4 Q Our interpretation is, that with the signing  
5 of this treaty the Lukuochiao Incident was settled.  
6 What happened later we shall not consider at the  
7 present moment; but am I correct in my assumption that  
8 with the signing of this agreement this incident --  
9 this particular incident was settled?

10 A The resumption of fighting was a continuation  
11 of what happened on July 7. At that time the Chinese  
12 authorities were willing to have the matter amiably  
13 settled, but as Japan pushed forward again the hostili-  
14 ties broke out.

15 Q Did not the Chinese decide immediately to carry  
16 out their withdrawal of the 37th Division in accordance  
17 with the provisions of this agreement?

18 A Yes. The Chinese Government then, following  
19 the agreement, ordered the transfer of the 37th Division  
20 to some other location.

21 Q Does it not then follow that by the very fact  
22 that the 37th Division was withdrawn in accordance with  
23 the agreement that the Lukuochiao Incident had been  
24 solved?

25 A That was but one of the terms and conditions



Faint, illegible text on the left page, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side.

CHING

CROSS

1 agreed. There were still other terms which both of the  
2 parties were obliged to carry out.

3 THE MONITOR: And remained unsolved.

4 THE INTERPRETER: And remained uncarried out.

5 Q Are you aware of the fact that on July 22, the  
6 Vice Chief of the Army General Staff, General Hsun-ping,  
7 suddenly arrived in Peiping?

8 A He was there in Peiping at that time, but  
9 whether it was on the 22nd or not, I cannot recall  
10 exactly.

11 Q Although the Chinese, in accordance with the  
12 above-mentioned agreement, had begun the withdrawal of  
13 the 37th Division, is it not true that with the sudden  
14 arrival of General Hsun-ping the Chinese suddenly changed  
15 their attitude?

16 A No. There was the difference of timing, I  
17 think.

18 Q Did the Japanese, in a very conciliatory atti-  
19 tude, ask for the transfer of the 37th Division on the  
20 26th of July?

21 A It was not in a conciliatory attitude; it was  
22 made in the form of an ultimatum. We were demanded to  
23 have the 37th Division withdrawn within twenty-four  
24 hours from Peiping.

25 Q Were the Chinese very angry on receiving this

CHING

CROSS

1 ultimatum?

2 A Yes.

3 Q Upon this, did the Chinese begin a vigorous  
4 offensive on all fronts and commence action against  
5 the Japanese at Feng-tai?

6 A There was a continuation of the previous  
7 hostilities started by the Japanese. We used three  
8 regiments -- we sent three regiments of troops to  
9 Feng-tai.

10 THE MONITOR: And it was only a tactic of  
11 war.

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Who is the Commander of the troops who  
2 attacked, who shelled Feng-Tai?

3 A I cannot recall quite accurately but I think  
4 he is a Regiment Commander named Ho.

5 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "The force attacking  
6 Feng-Tai were formed by two regiments from 37th Di-  
7 vision and one regiment from 38th Division and they  
8 were all under the command of Brigadier General Ho."

9 Q Who is the person who ordered this attack on  
10 Feng-Tai and the advance on all fronts?

11 A The fighting was in progress ever since July  
12 7th. The order was given by General Sun-Cheyuan.

13 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "Attacking order was given  
14 by General Sung Cho-yuan on July 26th."

15 Q Do you not consider that the Sino-Japanese  
16 hostilities began because, although the Japanese side  
17 had only communicated to the Chinese their desire that  
18 the provisions of the agreement of July 9th be carried  
19 out, the Chinese did not carry out these provisions  
20 and illegally opened an offensive against the Japanese?

21 A I think that was due to you not knowing the  
22 situation fully. The Japanese started offensive on the  
23 July 7th and on the July 9th there was some sort of  
24 negotiations and some result was obtained but, due to  
25 Japan not observing these agreements and increasing

G  
O  
l  
d  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
A  
b  
r  
a  
m

CHING

CROSS

1 their troops on the 14th, there was a constant contin-  
2 uation of hostilities on the 26th of July.

3 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "The fighting was re-  
4 sumed on the 14th of July, not on the 26th of July.  
5 The 26th of July, attacking order was only a technique  
6 of waging war."

7 Q If that is so, then when was the transferring  
8 of the 37th Division carried out, from what day of what  
9 month to what day of what month?

10 A The agreement made on the 9th of July was to  
11 the effect that only that portion of 37th Division  
12 Army stationed at Lukouchiao should be withdrawn. It  
13 was not to the effect that all 37th Division should be  
14 withdrawn from the area of Hopai. As far as that part  
15 of 37th Division stationed at Lukouchiao, the withdrawal  
16 was carried out on the tenth following the agreement  
17 made on the ninth.

18 Q Do you mean to say then that does not in-  
19 clude the section of the 37th Division that was guarding  
20 Wanping?

21 A That part that was obliged to withdraw was  
22 that small number of troops stationed at the Wangping  
23 city under the regiment command of Regiment Commander  
24 Chi-Hsingwen.

25 Q If it is true that on July 10th the 37th

CHING

CROSS

1 Division had already withdrawn from Wanping City and  
2 from Lukouchiao, there would be no need for the Chinese  
3 Army to be angry because of any demand made by the  
4 Japanese on July 26th for such a withdrawal?

5 A As regards to the agreed withdrawal of that  
6 small number of troops stationed at Lukouchiao, there  
7 was agreed by China with a view to secure peace and  
8 minimize any imminent threat of war. As to Japanese  
9 demand to have the whole 37th Division Army withdrawn  
10 to some other place, there was encroaching upon the  
11 sovereign rights of China. Of course, that cannot be  
12 accommodated for --

13 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "Cannot be compromised."

14 Q I shall question you on another point. On  
15 July 9th, at the time when the agreement was signed,  
16 did you consider that the Incident of July 7th con-  
17 stituted a war?

18 A At the time we signed that agreement on the  
19 9th of July, it was my hope that these incidents would  
20 not be continued and would not be further aggravated --

21 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "Into war."

22 Q My question was: Did you consider that the  
23 Incident of July 7th was a war or was not a war?

24 A Prior to the Marco Polo Bridge Incident there  
25 were two minor incidents similar to what happened on

CHING

CROSS

1 July 7th. One was Tengchatzu Incident. That was an  
2 incident that happened in the Province of Chahar.  
3 And another was an incident that happened in September,  
4 1936 at Feng-Tai.

5 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "They were all solved  
6 by compromise."

7 A (Continuing): At the beginning I considered  
8 the Marco Polo Bridge Incident as a local affair, but,  
9 unfortunately, on the 11th of July, 1937, the Japanese  
10 Cabinet under the late KONOYE had passed a resolution  
11 to the effect that they will send forth a bigger number  
12 of Army --

13 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "to North China."

14 Q Since you insist on not answering my question,  
15 I shall withdraw this and turn to my next -- turn to  
16 the next phase.

17 On July 9th, at the very moment when the agreement  
18 was signed, did hostilities between Japan and China  
19 cease?

20 A For a moment it was ceased but the fighting  
21 ceased in daytime, resumed in nighttime.

22 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "The Japanese opened  
23 up gunfire in the nighttime," correction.

24 Q Are you aware of the fact that a strong attack  
25 having been launched on Feng-Tai by the Chinese and a

CHENG

CROSS

1 general advance on all fronts having been begun,  
2 General KASUKI, Commander of the Japanese forces, de-  
3 clared that all possible efforts having been in vain,  
4 we shall be obliged to take punitive measures?

5 A The hostilities started on the 7th of July  
6 and it was intensified on the 8th and on the 14th of  
7 July the fighting was again very much intensified. On  
8 the 26th of July we started attacking Feng-Tai --

9 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "27th."

10 A (Continuing): And on the 28th the Japanese  
11 Commander KATSUKI started attacking Nangyuan.

12 Q Was the first attack by a large force car-  
13 ried out by the Chinese Army on Feng-Tai and the  
14 attack on Nangyuan by the Japanese carried out later  
15 after that attack?

16 A Yes, it is true that the attack on Feng-Tai  
17 took place before the Japanese attack on Nangyuan.  
18 But, ever since July 7th, Japan has a much big number  
19 of troops in Hopei and started warlike actions.

20 THE CHINESE MONITOR: "And attacking in various  
21 places."

22 Q Then, does it not follow that instead of  
23 solving local problems by agreements, by local agree-  
24 ments but -- I shall repeat that question. Then,  
25 instead of solving local problems by local agreements

CHING

CROSS

1 and, instead of doing this, starting a large-scale war  
2 as a state by moving large forces, was this not first  
3 carried out by the Chinese side and not by the Japan-  
4 ese?

5 A It was Japan who first started moving troops  
6 from Kwantung. It was Japan who first started moving  
7 Kwantung troops to Tientsin and then to Lukouchiao,  
8 and then to Feng-Tai. It was not China who started  
9 the all-offensive warfare.

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25



CHING

CROSS

M  
O  
R  
S  
E  
&  
A  
b  
r  
a  
m

1 Q My question was not concerned with troop  
2 movements. What I wanted to ask you was, was it not  
3 the Chinese side that first started a large scale  
4 attack using large forces?

5 A The time of the outbreak of the July 7th  
6 affair both sides were employing troops of a size more  
7 than a brigade.

8 MONITOR: Correction. Prior to the Chinese  
9 attack on Feng-tai, both sides were using troops  
10 greater than a brigade.

11 Q Was not the Chinese Army responsible for the  
12 fact that a large scale war finally did break out, if  
13 forces only approximating one brigade had been used up  
14 to then and if it had been possible up to then to solve  
15 these local problems by local agreements and especially  
16 by diplomatic negotiations?

17 MONITOR: Slight correction. Was it not the  
18 Chinese Army itself who brought the situation into an  
19 open hostility in spite of the fact that it would have  
20 been possible to settle the problem by means of  
21 diplomacy locally if forces involved were only the  
22 size of a brigade?

23 A It was Japan who first initiated the war.  
24 Naturally Japan should be responsible. It is my  
25 opinion that to decide who should be responsible for

CHING

CROSS

1 the war is who fired the first shot, is not who used  
2 the bigger army. There is no such international differ-  
3 ence, definition, in a bigger force or a smaller force.  
4 What is the difference between bigger forces and  
5 smaller forces, such as more than a thousand or less than  
6 a thousand?

7 Q Since that is not an answer to my question,  
8 I shall repeat my question.

9 A If you don't want to listen to my statements  
10 or answers, then you don't have to ask me to testify.

11 Q My question was, do you not consider that the  
12 Chinese Army, that the Chinese side, was responsible  
13 for first using large forces at a time when the  
14 Incident could have been settled locally by diplomacy --  
15 when the problem was one that was easily solvable on  
16 the spot by diplomacy and at a time when it was easily  
17 solvable?

18 A This responsibility rests with Japan.

19 Q I shall terminate my questioning as you have  
20 only given statements which had nothing to do with my  
21 questions and did not give me any direct answers at  
22 all.

23 A You said that China should be responsible and  
24 I said that Japan should be responsible. That is my  
25 answer.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q I shall question you on a completely different  
2 phase. You have spoken of having seen the TANAKA  
3 Memorial. In what language was this so-called memor-  
4 ial written?

5 A What I saw was the Chinese translation.

6 Q Have you ever ascertained whether there was  
7 a Japanese text of this so-called memorial?

8 A I have not seen the original Japanese version  
9 of the memorandum.

10 Q This next question will be rather long. In  
11 the contents of the TANAKA Memorial there are such  
12 phrases as "FUKUSHIMA, Yasumasa's daughter of high and  
13 noble birth became an adviser to a Mongolian prince,"  
14 or that General YAMAGATA, Aritomo, who was already  
15 dead in 1920, participated in a conference concerning  
16 ways and means to cope with the Nine Power Treaty  
17 which was signed in 1922. Also that General TANAKA,  
18 Giichi was exposed to the danger of being assassinated  
19 by a bomb at the pier in Shanghai. All these so-called  
20 events are things which no Japanese can ever dream  
21 ever happened, but did'nt these points catch your  
22 attention?

23 MONITOR: Slight correction. In reference  
24 to General TANAKA, on his way back from Europe he  
25 was exposed to the danger of being assassinated.

CHING

CROSS

1           A    I do not know of this. It is surprising that  
2 they know much more than I do.

3           MONITOR: Correction. I respect you for  
4 having such a reach of common sense more than I do.

5           THE PRESIDENT: We will recess now for fifteen  
6 minutes.

7                   (Whereupon, at 1445, a recess was  
8 taken until 1500, after which the proceedings  
9 were resumed as follows:)

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

CHING

CROSS

D  
u  
d  
a  
&  
W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now  
2 resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Your questions are very concise  
4 and very clear. But, nevertheless, many of them have  
5 been put before and answered.

6 BY MR. HAYASHI (Continuing):

7 Q The fact that the TANAKA Memorial does not  
8 exist was made clear before this Tribunal by Admiral  
9 OKADA, Keisuke. Do you not feel that this so-called  
10 Memorial was cooked up for the purpose of instigating  
11 anti-Japanese feeling?

12 THE PRESIDENT: This is the first time that  
13 question has been put, Colonel.

14 COLONEL MORROW: Beg pardon?

15 THE PRESIDENT: I suppose you object to it?

16 COLONEL MORROW: I object to its materiality.  
17 We have gone into this subject considerably. I doubt  
18 the materiality of any further questioning about the  
19 TANAKA Memorial. I raise the question.

20 THE PRESIDENT: He is suggesting it was cooked  
21 for a certain purpose. I think we will take the answer.  
22 We know what it will be.

23 Better repeat the question.

24 THE WITNESS: The question is not clear.

25 Q The fact that the TANAKA Memorial does not

CHING

CROSS

1 exist was made abundantly clear before this Tribunal  
2 by Admiral OKADA, Keisuke. Did you not feel that this  
3 book was cooked up for the purpose of instigating  
4 anti-Japanese feeling?

5 A It does not matter very much whether TANAKA  
6 Memorial ever existed or not. Even it may have been  
7 destroyed or it was not existed at all. But the fact  
8 that Japan occupied Manchuria and then North China and  
9 then greater part of China and then Pearl Harbor Inci-  
10 dent still remain.

11 Q Your answer is very far off from what I asked  
12 you. My question was, did you not feel that this book  
13 was cooked up for the purpose of instigating anti-  
14 Japanese feeling in China?

15 A What I think is this, that the Chinese may not  
16 know some existing facts, but they certainly would not  
17 cook up some facts out of nothing.

18 THE PRESIDENT: Have you any new line of cross-  
19 examination?

20 MR. HAYASHI: Yes, I do.

21 Q Are you aware of the fact that at the confer-  
22 ence on Eastern Affairs held in July, 1927, Prime Min-  
23 ister General TANAKA, Giichi, made clear his policy in  
24 a speech which runs as follows: "The stabilization of  
25 political conditions and the restoration of order within

1 China should be done by the Chinese people themselves.  
 2 The stabilization of political conditions in the three  
 3 northeastern provinces also should depend upon the  
 4 efforts of these provinces themselves."

5 A I quite agree with that statement. The deplor-  
 6 able thing is that they have never followed this state-  
 7 ment.

8 Q I shall question you on another line. When  
 9 did the military training of students in North China  
 10 begin?

11 A The central government order was received in  
 12 the Spring of 1936. But prior to that some of the  
 13 schools had already put up these courses by themselves.  
 14 In 1937 there was some concentrated training.

15 Q You have stated that the chief of staff of the  
 16 Japanese forces in China at the time, in North China  
 17 at the time of the Lukuochiao Incident was a Colonel  
 18 HASHIMOTO. Do you know his full name?

19 A The full name was HASHIMOTO, Gon.

20 Q You have stated also that the Japanese consul  
 21 at Kalgan was also named HASHIMOTO. Do you know his  
 22 full name?

23 A I am sorry, I forgot his full name. What I  
 24 know is only HASHIMOTO.

25 Q Did you know Consul HASHIMOTO well?

CHING

CROSS

1 A Yes, well.

2 Q Is this Consul HASHIMOTO among the twenty-  
3 five defendants sitting in the dock here?

4 A No, I don't know.

5 Q You think he is not there.

6 MR. HAYASHI: That is all I have to ask.

7 THE PRESIDENT: Captain Kleiman.

8 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

9 BY CAPTAIN KLEIMAN:

10 Q General, was there a treaty signed in the year  
11 1924 between the Soviet Government and the Chinese Gov-  
12 ernment?

13 A That time I was in the army. I couldn't remem-  
14 ber that.

15 THE MONITOR: Correction: That time I was  
16 with troop duty and I can't remember it.

17 Q Well, do you remember any treaty that was  
18 signed around that time between the Soviet Government  
19 and the Chinese Government wherein it was agreed that  
20 the Chinese Eastern Railway was to be managed by  
21 directors of China and of the Soviet Government; that  
22 neither of the parties would permit propaganda by any  
23 of its organizations against the other party?

24 THE PRESIDENT: Can you enlighten the Tribunal  
25 on the point you are hoping to make, Captain?



CHING

CROSS

1                   CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: Yes, your Honor. I wish to  
2 show the friction that existed between the Chinese  
3 Government and the Japanese Government between the year  
4 1924 and the year 1929 when the alleged TANAKA Plan was  
5 supposed to have first been discovered. I wish to ask  
6 three questions to lead up to that question, if it  
7 please your Honor. It will expedite the trial. We  
8 may have to call witnesses from China for that purpose,  
9 and as I said once before, it helps in expediting the  
10 trial if we can ask the questions now.

11                   COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, there is  
12 a general rule, I take it, that the cross-examination  
13 should be limited to the matters brought forth in chief.  
14 I do not remember of any matters such as he refers to  
15 that have been brought out in chief.

16                   THE PRESIDENT: It might be convenient to  
17 adopt such a rule, but I cannot say that it has been  
18 adopted yet. But I will take the views of my col-  
19 leagues.

20                   (Whereupon, the Members of the Tribunal  
21 conferred among themselves.)  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Morrow, this is a  
2 matter ~~in~~ which there is a different practice in  
3 different countries. I think Australia and Britain  
4 have the same practice, and New Zealand. I think we  
5 do, of course, allow any question which is relevant  
6 to any issue arising in the trial at any stage, but  
7 I understand, in Canada and in the United States, it is  
8 different. We have come to no conclusion about this  
9 matter yet.

10 In all events, Captain Kleiman, you have  
11 failed to convince us, I think, that you should be  
12 permitted to ask this question which, as I understand  
13 it now, has no bearing on any issue. The relations  
14 between the Soviets and China do not seem to have any  
15 bearing on any point we have to decide. So, we will  
16 disallow that question.

17 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: May it please the Tribunal,  
18 the TANAKA Plan is most definitely mentioned in this  
19 witness' affidavit on page 3 of exhibit 199, and may  
20 we not have an opportunity to bring out the circum-  
21 stances under which the so-called discovery of this  
22 so-called Plan took place to show that this Plan is  
23 nothing more than a fake?

24 THE PRESIDENT: The question is disallowed  
25 at this stage. You may be able to renew it when you

CHING

CROSS

1 have more to support it.

2 Q General, in the year 1927 did Chiang Kai-  
3 shek exclude from the Kuomintang Party Chinese  
4 communists?

5 COLONEL MORROW: Raise the question of  
6 materiality, if the Court please.

7 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: With reference to the  
8 TANAKA Plan to show that it was a figment of the  
9 imagination of Chinese communists to divert the  
10 attention of propaganda activities of communists in  
11 China against the so-called aggression of Japanese  
12 in China and Manchuria.

13 THE PRESIDENT: I think we will resolve  
14 this on the narrow ground that the witness has told  
15 us all he knows about the TANAKA Plan. That is my  
16 understanding of his evidence. We will disallow  
17 the question.

18 Q General, in the year 1929 did Chinese police  
19 raid the Soviet Consulate at Harbin and find con-  
20 clusive proof that communist propaganda organization  
21 was operating under the guise of consular activities?

22 THE PRESIDENT: That is too remote. The  
23 question itself suggests no association of any issue  
24 that I can discover. It is not even remote; I think  
25 it is wholly immaterial.

CHING

CROSS

1           CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: Our purpose, if it please  
2 the Tribunal, is to show the propaganda activity of  
3 the communists in China at that time, to show the  
4 circumstances under which this TANAKA Plan was devised  
5 to show that this itself was a matter of propaganda  
6 on the part of Chinese communists aided by other  
7 communists.

8           THE PRESIDENT: The connection is still  
9 missing. You may be able to establish it when you  
10 call evidence.

11           CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: May I ask one question?  
12 I will say it is of the same nature --

13           THE PRESIDENT: If it is the same, you may  
14 not ask it.

15           CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: All right, your Honor.  
16 No further questions, may it please the Tribunal.

17           MR. T. OKAMOTO: I am counsel OKAMOTO. I  
18 wish to ask a few simple questions.

19           CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

20           BY MR. T. OKAMOTO:

21           Q First, concerning the so-called Boxer  
22 Protocol, did this Protocol limit the number of  
23 troops to be stationed by each Allied country in  
24 North China?

25           COLONEL MORROW: If your Honor please, I

CHING

CROSS

1 suggest the best evidence -- the Protocol is one of  
2 the basic documents. It has been a document in this  
3 case, in all events, and the document itself is the  
4 best evidence. He is referring to the Protocol --  
5 the night of September 7, 1901.

6 MR. T. OKAMOTO: I am merely testing the  
7 witness' knowledge concerning the Boxer Protocol.

8 THE PRESIDENT: You can test his credibility,  
9 not his knowledge.

10 MR. T. OKAMOTO: I shall put another ques-  
11 tion then.

12 THE PRESIDENT: You can test his knowledge  
13 of facts which he has presumed to state here, of  
14 course.

15 Q In answer to a question put by Colonel War-  
16 ren you stated that the Japanese Army had fifteen  
17 thousand men in China -- in North China at the time  
18 of the outbreak of the China Incident, is that cor-  
19 rect?

20 A There was only -- there was estimated, from  
21 reports I gathered, that at that time the Japanese  
22 troop movements was so frequent between Manchuria and  
23 China proper that they frequently come and go.

24 Q Aside from this question of coming and  
25 going, do you admit that the strength of the Japan-

CHING

CROSS

1       ese forces in China was the same as stipulated in  
2       the Boxer Protocol?

3               COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, he  
4       is bringing in the Protocol again. If I remember  
5       distinctly, there is no provision as to number of  
6       troops except as to what they are intended to be  
7       used for.

8               THE PRESIDENT: The need for the troops  
9       may regulate the numbers, of course.

10              Why two counsel for defense at the lectern?

11              Q   Concerning the remarks made by the prose-  
12       cutor, I should like to hear the witness' own state-  
13       ment concerning the number of troops stationed in  
14       China.

15              THE MONITOR:       Because I believe that  
16       the answer should be given by the witness, not by  
17       the prosecutor.

18              A   The witness' answer to the counsel's ques-  
19       tion was: I am afraid that the number of Japanese  
20       troops stationed in North China then was over what  
21       was stipulated.

22              CHINESE MONITOR: Was in excess than what  
23       was necessary for this purpose.

24              Q   Who determines what is the number of troops  
25       necessary?

CHING

CROSS

1 A The demarcation lies in how big the neces-  
2 sity to station a certain number of troops to pro-  
3 tect the railway line.

4 CHINESE MONITOR: From Peiping to the sea-  
5 port -- maintain the peace and order along the  
6 communication line as stated in the treaty.

7 Q But, as the prosecutor himself stated,  
8 there is no provision in the Boxer Protocol limiting  
9 the number of troops to be stationed in that area.  
10 Who is to determine what is the minimum necessary  
11 requirements?

12 A I think the commanders -- I mean the  
13 British, American, French and Japanese commanders of  
14 troops stationed there will have to decide for them-  
15 selves according to the factual necessity.

16 Q Then, do you mean to say that it is the com-  
17 manders of the various Allied troops who decide for  
18 themselves what are the minimum necessary require-  
19 ments?

20 A I think these commanders might have, pur-  
21 suant to their governments' order, to decide the  
22 number of troops to be stationed there. But I want  
23 to point out that none of these powers had ever sta-  
24 tioned any troop many times bigger than what is  
25 factually needed.

CHING

CROSS

1 CHINESE MONITOR: Except Japan.

2 A (Continuing) except Japan.

3 Q You have excepted Japan, but do you not  
4 admit that the complex interests possessed by Japan  
5 in North China far exceed those of other nations  
6 there?

7 A Yes, I admit.

8 Q The facts are, and these facts can be sus-  
9 tained if we look up the records, that there are  
10 only seven thousand -- there were only seven thousand  
11 Japanese troops in China at the time. Do you agree  
12 with this?

13 A I think it does not matter very much if  
14 they had seven thousand or fifteen thousand men  
15 stationed there in North China. I don't remember  
16 that the Chinese Government ever said that the  
17 fifteen thousand Japanese troops there were in ex-  
18 cess.

19 CHINESE MONITOR: Correction: The Chinese  
20 Government didn't at that time complain to the  
21 Japanese that their troops was too much then.

22 Q Then I shall ask you on another phase: You  
23 have stated that in 1937 there was no Communist Army  
24 in North China; is that so?

25 A At that time only some schools, the students



CHING

CROSS

1 of which are somewhat left inclined -- but there  
2 was never any Communist troop.

3 Q Do you know a general called Shih-Yusan?

4 A Yes, I do.

5 Q Did This General Shih-Yusan have any con-  
6 nection with the Communist Army, or didn't he?

7 A In the year 1937 I believe that he did not  
8 have any connection with communists, but whether he  
9 had any connection with the communists after that I  
10 don't know.

11 Q There is a province called Shansi among the  
12 five provinces of Northern China. Was not that  
13 province occupied at the time by Communist armies?

14 A The province of Shansi was never occupied  
15 by Communist troops.

16 Q From what date to what date do you speak?

17 A The time I refer to is around July 7, 1937.

18 Q Before that, was that province ever occupied  
19 by communists?

20 A No. But there was once they did attempt  
21 to attack the province of Shansi, but they were  
22 repelled by Chinese National Government troops to-  
23 gether with the local government armies.

24 Q When did the Communist Army invade Shansi --  
25 attack Shansi?

CHING

CROSS

1           A    I cannot recall the exact date, but I  
2 think it is around 1934. But one thing I can assure  
3 you is that at the time when July 7 Incident -- 1937  
4 Incident broke out, there was no communists in that  
5 province.

6           Q    Did not communist influence in North China  
7 begin to expand after this attempt by communists to  
8 occupy Shansi province in 1934, and was that not one  
9 of the causes which led to the outbreak of the Sino-  
10 Japanese conflict?

11          A    This was but a pretext put up by the Japan-  
12 ese militarists. As a matter of fact, at that time  
13 there was no communist activities at all in any of  
14 these provinces.

15          Q    Then, when do you consider that the Chinese  
16 Communist Party, which has now so much influence in  
17 North China -- when do you consider that the Chinese  
18 Communist Party began to gain its influence -- its  
19 power?

20          A    This, I should say, was taking place ever  
21 since the outbreak of July 7, 1937 Incident. The  
22 Japanese nurtured this movement.

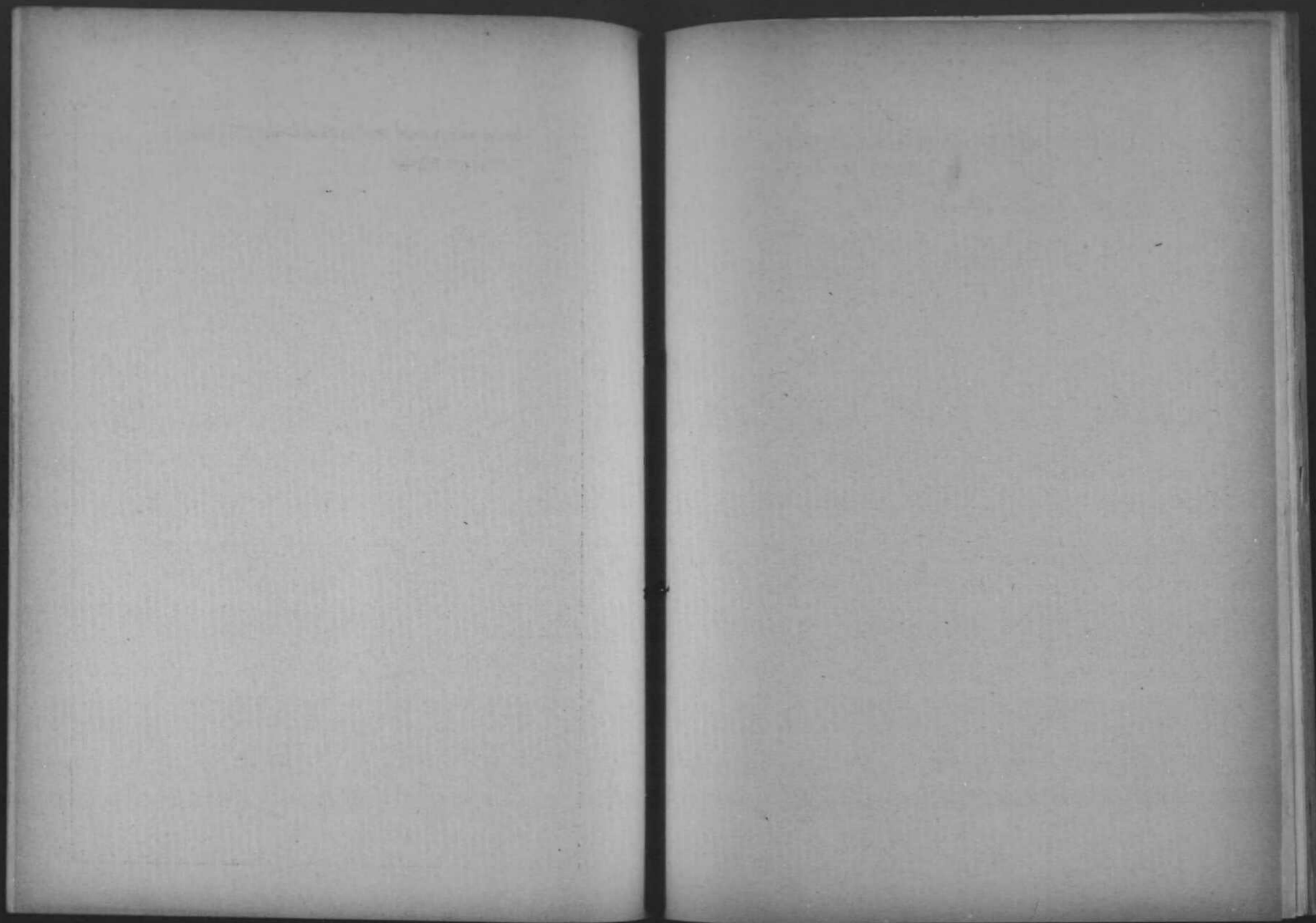
23                THE PRESIDENT: We will adjourn now until  
24 half-past nine tomorrow morning.

25                        (Whereupon, at 1600, an adjourn-

ment was taken until Thursday, 25 July,  
1946, at 0930.)

---

- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6
- 7
- 8
- 9
- 10
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14
- 15
- 16
- 17
- 18
- 19
- 20
- 21
- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25



21.7.25  
25 Jul 46  
corrected.

25 JULY 1946

I N D E X  
Of  
WITNESSES

<u>Prosecution's Witnesses</u>	<u>Direct</u>	<u>Cross</u>
Ching, Teh-chun		2479 to 2518
Wilson, Dr. Robert O.	2527	

I N D E X  
Of  
EXHIBITS

<u>Pros.</u> <u>No.</u>	<u>Def.</u> <u>No.</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>For</u> <u>Ident.</u>	<u>In</u> <u>Evidence</u>
204		Affidavit of Dr. Robert O. Wilson	2527	

1 Thursday, 25 July, 1946

2 - - -

3  
4 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
5 FOR THE FAR EAST  
6 Court House of the Tribunal  
7 War Ministry Building  
8 Tokyo, Japan

9 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
10 at 0930.

11 - - -

12 Appearances:

13 For the Tribunal, same as before.

14 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

15 For the Defense Section, same as before.

16 - - -

17 (English to Japanese, Japanese to  
18 English, English to Chinese, and Chinese to  
19 English interpretation was made by the  
20 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
2 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: All the accused are present  
4 except OKAWA who is represented by counsel. Does  
5 any counsel desire to mention any matter?

6 The Chief Referee of the Language Section  
7 saw me today and complains that on account of the  
8 unnecessary length of some of the questions, it is  
9 most difficult for the interpreters to perform their  
10 duties. Some of the passages from the Lytton Report,  
11 if not the whole report, have already been translated  
12 into Japanese, and if the translation were made avail-  
13 able to the interpreters, their duties would not be  
14 so difficult.

15 The interpreters are also having difficulty  
16 with questions which are in negative form, although  
17 they could be in affirmative form. I again urge  
18 counsel to make their questions short and clear, and  
19 to give due notice of any passage from a report or  
20 other document which they desire to be read to a wit-  
21 ness.

22 Is there any further cross-examination?

23 MR. T. OKAMOTO: May I be permitted to continue  
24 my cross-examination of yesterday?  
25



CHING

CROSS

1 CHING TEH-CHUN, called as a witness on  
2 behalf of the prosecution, resumed the stand and  
3 testified as follows:

4 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

5 BY MR. T. OKAMOTO:

6 Q Since the reply to my last question yester-  
7 day was not clear, I should like to have it repeated.

8 A Yesterday I answered to the question by  
9 saying that it was because the Japanese occupation of  
10 Tientsin and Peiping that many of the Chinese students  
11 were Communists and compelled to join the Communist  
12 Party. So it can be said that it was the Japanese  
13 who indirectly nurtured the growth of the Communists.

14 Q Your present explanation does not seem to  
15 show any relationship between cause and effect. Could  
16 you explain it further?

17 A What I have told you is concrete fact.  
18 Students, because of the fact that Tientsin, Peiping  
19 and surrounding areas fell to the Japanese, were com-  
20 pelled to join the Chinese Communists. This fact is  
21 a concrete fact.

22 Q When was that?

23 A That is referring to some time after July  
24 7th, 1937.

25 Q Then, do you mean to say that this was after

CHING

CROSS

1 the outbreak of the Marco Polo Bridge Incident, or  
2 are you trying to explain a situation which existed  
3 prior to that Incident?

4 A Referring to the time after the outbreak  
5 of the July 7th Incident -- prior to the outbreak of  
6 the July 7th Incident -- some of the students may have  
7 been found to have some Left inclination, but there  
8 was never any Communist troops.

9 Q Then, are you aware of the fact that on the  
10 tenth of June, 1935, Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek issued  
11 an executive order for friendly relations between two  
12 neighboring countries, namely, between China and Japan?

13 A Yes, I know.

14 Q Do you know the cause for the proclamation  
15 of such an order?

16 A The purpose was to maintain peace in China,  
17 and ultimately maintain the peace of Asia, and ulti-  
18 mately the peace of the world.

19 Q Was not this order issued to prevent the  
20 general anti-Japanese movement in China, especially  
21 in North China, as well as the anti-Japanese resistance  
22 movement carried on by the Communists in that northern  
23 area?

24 A At that time there was no anti-Japanese  
25 movement in North China. The purpose of the order was

CHING

CROSS

1 to admonish the people as a whole, as well as the  
2 Chinese Army, to respect and be friends with neighbor  
3 countries.

4 Q Then, Mr. Witness, are you acquainted with  
5 General Shang-chen who was in North China about 1935?

6 THE MONITOR: Correction: "who was the  
7 Governor of Hopei Province."

8 A Yes, I know.

9 Q Are you aware of the fact that General Shang-  
10 chen issued an order to bring under control anti-  
11 Japanese terrorists?

12 A No, not that I ever heard of.

13 Q Then, Mr. Witness, are you aware of the fact  
14 that your superior, General Sung Cheyuan, issued an  
15 order declaring that very positive steps must be taken  
16 to bring under control the anti-Japanese secret so-  
17 cieties in November, 1935?

18 A That order was given on the basis of an  
19 order received by General Sung from Generalissimo Chiang.  
20 There was a preventative order -- the order was prevent-  
21 ative in nature.

22 Q Where is General Sung Cheyuan at the present  
23 moment?

24 A He is already dead now.

25 Q Then, are you aware of the Hsi-an Incident

CHING

CROSS

1 of November, 1936?

2 A Yes, I know of that.

3 Q Was not this Incident one in which Marshal  
4 Chang Hsueh-liang in collaboration with the Chinese  
5 Communists kidnapped and placed under custody Gener-  
6 alissimo Chiang Kai-shek?

7 A That I don't know.

8 COL. MORROW: I raise the question of material-  
9 ity and relevancy of this line of questioning, if the  
10 Court please.

11 MR. T. OKAMOTO: This incident has a very  
12 relevant connection with the present point.

13 THE PRESIDENT: I think it is as relevant as  
14 any of the other matters we have allowed cross-examin-  
15 ation about. The whole purpose is to discover the  
16 state of China -- its disturbed state is suggested,  
17 and it is suggested, I suppose, that the Japanese took  
18 appropriate measures to protect their interests there,  
19 and it will be further suggested that they were acting  
20 within treaties. This is a suggestion that the country  
21 was so disturbed that its chief was imprisoned.

22 You may proceed.

23 Q Does the witness know what kind of change  
24 took place in the relationships between the Kuomintang  
25 and the Chinese Communist Party as a result of the

CHING

CROSS

Hsi-an Incident?

1 A No, I don't know.

2 Q Where were you, Mr. Witness, at that time?

3 A I was in Peiping then.

4 Q What was your position at that time?

5 A Then, I was the Mayor of Peiping. What I  
6 know is this: that after the Incident at Hsi-an, the  
7 person responsible for that incident was Chang Hsueh-  
8 liang, became repentant, and then he sent Generalissimo  
9 back to Nanking and then the people all over the  
10 country were so overwhelmingly joyous that they showed  
11 the greatest sign of vindicating the Generalissimo,  
12 and the country was unified as a whole; and Japan,  
13 then, was so much jealous of that fact.

14 Q When you say that China had never been more  
15 unified than at that time, do you mean to say that  
16 peace and collaboration was established between the  
17 Kuomintang and the Chinese Communists?

18 A Yes, the feeling between the two parties  
19 were very good then.

20 Q Does that not mean, then, that the Kuomin-  
21 tang resolved jointly with the Chinese Communists to  
22 pursue a policy of anti-Japanese resistance?

23 A No, that was not the case. The two parties  
24 joined together to prepare themselves to guard against  
25 the further onslaught of the Japanese.

CHING

CROSS

A  
b  
r  
a  
m  
&  
M  
o  
r  
s  
e

1 Q I take your present reply to be an endorse-  
2 ment of the statement included in my question. This  
3 fact, together with the fact that General Shang-Chen  
4 and General Sung Che-yuan successively issued orders  
5 to bring under control anti-Japanese terrorists and  
6 other like groups is a matter which could be re-  
7 conciled with your present reply.

8 MONITOR: Correction: I take your answer to  
9 mean the confirmation of the statement contained in  
10 my question. Now I would like to ask another question  
11 on a different point, that is, in 1935, as I said  
12 before, Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek issued an order  
13 for maintenance of friendly relations with his  
14 neighbors, and then that was followed later by orders  
15 from General Shang-Chen and General Sung Che-yuan  
16 for suppression and surveillance over terrorists and  
17 anti-Japanese secret societies. Now, how can these  
18 facts be reconciled with your present reply?

19 THE PRESIDENT: Counsel must not make  
20 statements to the witness. That in effect is largely  
21 a conversation with the witness. Counsel must con-  
22 fine himself to asking questions, and the questions  
23 should be reasonably brief and clear. I do not  
24 think the witness should be asked to answer that  
25 question. You had better make another attempt.

CHING

CROSS

1 Q Then, may I inquire, Mr. Witness, whether  
2 the executive order issued by the Generalissimo for  
3 friendly relations between two neighboring countries,  
4 that is, China and Japan was effective even after the  
5 Hsi-an Incident?

6 A - Of course, it was conditional upon the fact  
7 that Japan should withhold her aggression.

8 Q Since the Hsi-an Incident was any order  
9 issued to you, Mr. Witness, from the central head-  
10 quarters of the Kuomintang Party with respect to a  
11 policy of anti-Japanism?

12 A No.

13 Q At about the time of the outbreak of the  
14 Marco Polo Incident on July 7, 1937, where was  
15 General Shih Yu-sun?

16 A General Shih Yu-sun was first at Peiping  
17 and after the outbreak of the war against Japan he  
18 went with General Sung to Paoting.

19 Q Do you know of the fact that General  
20 Shih Yu-sun in the dark of the night of July the  
21 7th fired both upon Japanese and Chinese Troops?

22 A What is the time you are referring to?  
23 Is it before the outbreak of the war of July 7th or  
24 after the outbreak of the war of July 7th?

25 Q Then I should like to ask you, did not the

CHING

CROSS

1 Marco Polo Incident break out as a result of the fact  
2 that General Shih Yu-sun fired both on Japanese and  
3 Chinese forces?

4 A No. That is not the case. I will give you  
5 some further explanation. At the time the 37th Division  
6 was allegedly anti-Japanese was withdrawn from  
7 Lukuochiao they were replaced by the troops under  
8 General Shih Yu-sun, who was then considered as pro-  
9 Japanese.

10 Q When did you, Mr. Witness, become a member  
11 of the Kuomintang?

12 A I was a member of Kuomintang at the time the  
13 party was in its inceptive stage.

14 THE PRESIDENT: Captain Brooks.

15 MR. BROOKS: Brooks, for OKAWA.

16 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

17 BY MR. BROOKS:

18 Q Mr. Witness, was a declaration of war made  
19 by China or by Japan at the time of the July, 1937  
20 Incident, or prior thereto?

21 THE PRESIDENT: That is a matter of which  
22 we can take judicial notice.

23 MR. BROOKS: If the Tribunal please, the  
24 witness states, on page 5, of exhibit 198, which  
25 is prosecution's document 1750, this was the very



CHING

CROSS

1 beginning of the Sino-Japanese War. I wanted to find  
2 out what he had in reference at that time.

3 THE PRESIDENT: You can have war without  
4 having a declaration of it, unfortunately.

5 MR. BROOKS: May the witness answer, for  
6 the base of another question I have?

7 THE PRESIDENT: It is useless, but he may  
8 answer.

9 A On the part of China there was never any  
10 order like that, but on the part of the Japanese  
11 Government, I wonder if there is any order of what  
12 we call punitive war against China.

13 Q Now, on exhibit 199, which is prosecution's  
14 document No. 2340, you have stated in your discussion  
15 with MATSUI you advocated that Asia -- that he ad-  
16 vocated that Asia, should be the Asia of the Asiatics,  
17 and that European and American influences should be  
18 expelled. I would like further information on the  
19 influences discussed that was considered necessary  
20 to be expelled. I would like further information  
21 on the influences discussed in this conversation  
22 that should be expelled.

23 A In brief, what he wanted is to expel the  
24 British and American interests out of Asia. The  
25 subsequent facts that happened at Pearl Harbor and

CHING

CROSS

1 the attack on Manila and other places will be factual  
2 enough to prove that.

3 THE PRESIDENT: We have had that answer before.

4 Q I wish to enlarge upon the answer. Did  
5 not certain countries have powerful commercial interests  
6 in China which they were fostering.

7 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, counsel  
8 for General MATSUI went into this matter and I raise  
9 the question that this is repetition.

10 THE PRESIDENT: I think the question is  
11 objectionable on another ground entirely, that unless  
12 it can be shown that the action of other countries  
13 compelled the action taken by Japan, the whole thing  
14 is irrelevant.

15 MR. BROOKS: That is exactly what I am going  
16 to show, if the Court please.

17 COLONEL MORROW: I also raise the question  
18 of relevancy, if the Court please.

19 THE PRESIDENT: That is what I said to Captain  
20 Brooks.

21 MR. BROOKS: I would like to point out, if  
22 the Court please, that I read and laid the basis for  
23 this, that certain European and American influences  
24 should be expelled. I would like to correct my  
25 statement as to what I intend to prove. I do not

CHING

CROSS

1 intend to show that certain nations caused these con-  
2 ditions which brought about this war. I do believe  
3 that certain powerful commercial interests, joining  
4 from various countries, brought about conditions which  
5 did bring this about, and I think with a little  
6 patience on the part of the Court I can bring that  
7 out, and I would like to get the information which  
8 this witness has bearing upon it, for later on I will  
9 have witnesses of my own to carry on.

10 THE PRESIDENT: If you are not merely fishing,  
11 but have evidence as you suggest, your questions should  
12 be very specific. They should be based on that  
13 evidence, and your questions are not specific; they  
14 are very vague, and I propose to disallow your ques-  
15 tions until they are made specific, because you now  
16 say you have evidence. You must put your questions  
17 on that evidence.

18 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I am now  
19 in the process of cross-examination. I am not pre-  
20 senting evidence on this phase, but I have a right  
21 to know how far to carry my evidence and what re-  
22 striction is placed on the cross-examination on the  
23 statements made that a conversation was had about  
24 European and American influences. It doesn't say  
25 European and American nations; it says influences,

CHING

CROSS

1 and I think that is very vital to this case. It is  
2 vital to know where China over all this period of  
3 years got the arms, the war materiel, the equipment,  
4 and the technical assistance and training necessary  
5 to prolong this strife, of which Japan was complaining  
6 because she was the recipient of this strife which  
7 was carried on over a long period of time.

8 THE PRESIDENT: Will you now state the  
9 nature of this evidence. You can refuse if you like,  
10 but at present so far as you have indicated it appears  
11 to be too remote.

12 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I will  
13 show by testimony, by affidavits, by certain records,  
14 of which I think possibly we will ask the Court to  
15 take judicial knowledge of certain facts, because  
16 they are of common knowledge, but I do not wish at  
17 this time to introduce evidence on this point or to  
18 expose to the prosecution the evidence that we are  
19 accumulating. However, I will make one specific  
20 reference to an American concern, I believe it was  
21 the Curtis-Wright concern, had a 30 million dollar  
22 aircraft plant that they were building in China at  
23 the time, a very critical time, and I think that  
24 will be shown later on in the testimony. If that  
25 is any indication, I would like to proceed.

CHING

CROSS

W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

THE PRESIDENT: You have fallen back in this alleged evidence for your justification and we will fix you there. You have now made it transparently plain that this evidence that you propose to rely on is far too remote to be of any assistance. Therefore, I decline, on behalf of the Tribunal, to allow you to proceed with that line of cross-examination.

MR. BROOKS: I see I will have to disclose further evidence to make my point clear. I state that behind that, even, there was a growing apprehension which may or may not have been justified by the Japanese and by Asiatic peoples after a study of the economic aggression of the various countries of the world over a period of years far before this which may or may not have made them feel justified in taking certain defensive measures which they today state are defensive and which are and may be proven defensive in regard to the relations and activities of the various nations in regard to assisting and directing Chinese armies in the field during this period of time. Was the war started with Pearl Harbor, or was it started prior to 1931?

THE PRESIDENT: The mere economic developments of other countries could not justify the Japanese resort to war.

CHING

CROSS

1 MR. BROOKS: That is true, if the Court  
2 please, unless a close study of diplomatic history  
3 for the last sixty years is made to show that not only  
4 economic development is followed -- is carried on by  
5 various countries, but political aggression follows  
6 closely in the footsteps and protective measures in  
7 various and sundry ways are fostered by certain power-  
8 ful commercial interests which have been the cause of  
9 most of our wars in the past.

10 THE PRESIDENT: Well, it is clear that you  
11 wish to pursue an interminable inquiry going back  
12 sixty years, and for all we know, eighty years, going  
13 back perhaps to Japan's first contact with the outside  
14 world. We cannot allow that. This Court would never  
15 conclude its duties, would never finish its work, if  
16 we allowed you to go that far back. That is too  
17 remote. If we go back to first causes we may go back  
18 centuries. We have to take a reasonable view. We  
19 refuse to allow you to proceed with that line of cross-  
20 examination.

21 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, in Section III  
22 of the Indictment there is a charge made of economic  
23 aggression in China and Greater East Asia. There is  
24 no limit on that period of time, as has been shown by  
25 the prosecution in their evidence produced thus far.

CHING

CROSS

1 THE PRESIDENT: You are divorcing that from  
2 its context. Economic aggression is not a crime.

3 We have given our decision.

4 MR. BROOKS: In this instance, if the Court  
5 please, if economic aggression--

6 THE PRESIDENT: We refuse to hear you further  
7 on that. We have given our decision and our reasons  
8 for it and you are simply wasting time now in pursuing  
9 the matter.

10 MR. BROOKS: If I may, I would like to cross-  
11 examine on another point.

12 THE PRESIDENT: Permission to cross-examine  
13 on those points is refused.

14 MR. BROOKS: I say on another point, if your  
15 Honor please.

16 THE PRESIDENT: What is the other point?

17 MR. BROOKS: May I ask the question and have  
18 your Honor find out if it is proper?

19 BY MR. BROOKS (Continuing):

20 Q Did your government, during this long period  
21 of trouble, make any formal complaint in reference to  
22 any of the matters set out in your testimony to either  
23 the League of Nations, to the Japanese Government, or  
24 any other governments?

25 A I was then only an official in the particular

CHING

CROSS

1 locality. Further, whether the central government  
2 foreign office had filed any official complaint with  
3 any of the governments or League of Nations, I cannot  
4 exactly tell. But there was some formal protest made  
5 to the League of Nations after September 18, 1931.

6 Q Did you, in your official capacity for this  
7 area, forward any material or reports as a basis for  
8 such complaints?

9 A I had reported to my central government  
10 about the several provocative acts and aggressive acts  
11 on the part of Japan. But whether the central govern-  
12 ment had reported same to the League of Nations, I  
13 don't know.

14 THE PRESIDENT: We will recess now for  
15 fifteen minutes.

16 (Whereupon, at 1045, a recess was  
17 taken until 1105, after which the proceedings  
18 were resumed as follows:)

19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



CHING

CROSS

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now  
2 resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Captain Brooks.

4 Q On what dates were these reports that you  
5 have mentioned made?

6 A I cannot recall the exact dates. Whenever  
7 there is an incident occurred, the report was immedi-  
8 ately made.

9 Q Can you recall the year in which any such  
10 reports were made?

11 A For instance, this Cha-Peh affair -- about  
12 the Cha-Peh Incident, a negotiation was made in June,  
13 1935; and following every negotiation, I made re-  
14 ports. And I was negotiating on the instructions  
15 sent to me by the Central Government, and I have made  
16 my report to the Central Government on every negotia-  
17 tions I had.

18 Q This affair in 1935 that you refer to, did  
19 that have any connection with the kidnapping of  
20 Chiang Kai-shek?

21 A There is no relation.

22 Q I believe I recall that was in 1925, was it  
23 not?

24 A Which case do you refer to?

25 Q The kidnapping of Chiang Kai-shek.

CHING

CROSS

1           A    I think you have made a mistake of the year  
2 in which General Chiang Kai-shek was kidnapped.

3           Q    What was your official position at the time  
4 this report was made in 1935?

5           A    I was then the Deputy Commander of the 29th  
6 Army and concurrently the Special Commissioner of  
7 Civilian Affairs in the Cha-Peh Provincial Govern-  
8 ment. I was then stationed in Chahar.

9           Q    To who and to what branch of the Central  
10 Government was such report directed?

11          A    I was obliged to make reports separately to  
12 several organs. As the Deputy Commander of the 29th  
13 Army I was obliged to make reports to the Ministry of  
14 Military Affairs; and, as Special Commissioner of the  
15 Department of Civilian Affairs of the Chahar Provin-  
16 cial Government, I was obliged to make reports to  
17 the Executive Yuan.

18          Q    What was contained in this report that you  
19 made in 1935? Do you remember the gist of the report?

20          A    I think you had better refer to the state-  
21 ments I had already written in regard to the results  
22 of negotiations I had.

23          Q    Do you show in such statement the contents  
24 of such report as you have testified to?

25               THE MONITOR: Will the reporter please read

CHING

CROSS

1 that.

2 (Whereupon the last question was  
3 read by the official court reporter.)4 A Do I understand you that you want me to  
5 make a complete report of the cables sent forth and  
6 back from the Central Government to me and from me  
7 to the Central Government, which is about two  
8 inches high?9 Q I want a brief summary of the gist of the  
10 1935 report which you testified you sent after that  
11 incident.12 A The first major point in the report I made  
13 in 1935, June, is like this: I reported that there  
14 were two Japanese civilians and two Japanese military  
15 officers coming in from To-Lun by truck. They were  
16 then trying to force their entry into the North Gate  
17 of Chang-Peh district. At the gates they were  
18 stopped by the gate guard who asked them to produce  
19 their passports. They refused and quarrel ensued.20 THE PRESIDENT: Do you really think it will  
21 help us to have this story over again? After all,  
22 you have to convince us, you know.23 CAPTAIN BROOKS: I was asking of the reports  
24 with the purpose of ascertaining the dates they were  
25 made so that it might be obtained for defense

CHING

CROSS

1 material; if there was any discrepancy or any other  
2 matter that might explain them, to see what action  
3 was taken by the Chinese Government upon them, and  
4 if they were considered important at that time; and  
5 I believe it will be relevant in this case.

6 THE PRESIDENT: I don't think it will help  
7 at all, Captain Brooks. I don't know what my col-  
8 leagues think. I feel they agree with me.

9 Do keep in mind that we really want to hear  
10 the things that will help us to see the defense view-  
11 point. But these small things won't, particularly  
12 as we have heard them before, and more than once.

13 CAPTAIN BROOKS: If the Court please, what  
14 I am trying to show is the defense viewpoint on this  
15 thing that looks to me like it is being disallowed on  
16 cross-examination. I think that, where he has made  
17 a statement here, although what he is saying in the  
18 report is repetitious, we are getting that it was  
19 made in the report of June, 1935 by him as the  
20 Deputy Commander of the 29th Army, and it was made  
21 to the Central Government, to certain offices, where  
22 it might be examined for further information; and we  
23 would like to put the truth before the Court.

24 The truth in these matters should come out  
25 regardless of how it affects any party so that the

CHING

CROSS

1 Court has it before it. It is often elusive to find  
2 the truth, and it is often hard to get it believed  
3 and to get the viewpoint of a certain group or  
4 individual seen.

5 THE MONITOR: Would the reporter kindly  
6 read that last statement?

7 (Whereupon the last paragraph was  
8 read by the official court reporter.)

9 CAPTAIN BROOKS: A misunderstanding of the  
10 intentions of certain parties often would even to  
11 mitigation -- if only to mitigation alone, should  
12 be allowed to be brought to the Court for the purpose  
13 of showing mitigating circumstances as the basis for  
14 certain actions. I think that the prosecution in  
15 this case has started this case with 1928 when the  
16 shooting started, but in any criminal case --

17 THE MONITOR: Would the reporter please  
18 read the last statement?

19 (Whereupon, the last statement  
20 was read by the official court reporter.)

21 THE PRESIDENT: I think we had better  
22 terminate this matter by the understanding that the  
23 Tribunal will give you every assistance to get that  
24 report if it will be released by the Chinese Govern-  
25 ment, or to have a Commission, if necessary, in

CHING

CROSS

1 China if the matters in the report are really of im-  
2 portance to you. In the meantime, I think you had  
3 better cease cross-examining about that report.

4 CAPTAIN BROOKS: I will cease cross-exam-  
5 ining on that report. I was glad to find out that  
6 there was a report so that we could discover it.  
7 Previous to this we did not know where it was or any-  
8 thing about it.

9 Q Now, in 1937, at the time of the Marco Polo  
10 Bridge Incident, what was your official position at  
11 that time?

12 THE PRESIDENT: Captain Brooks, I would ask  
13 your cooperation with the Court. You are asking  
14 things already obtained.

15 CAPTAIN BROOKS: I want to find out: Did  
16 you make a report in your official capacity as such?

17 THE PRESIDENT: Counsel owes a duty to the  
18 Tribunal. The position of American counsel is no  
19 different from that of British counsel; they are  
20 officers of the Court, and they must help the Court  
21 and not impede it.

22 Q Now, Mr. Witness, do you know what claim  
23 China had to sovereignty over the territory of Outer  
24 Mongolia and whether the orders of the Central Govern-  
25 ment were obeyed by the officials there up to the

CHING

CROSS

1 year 1945?

2 THE PRESIDENT: That has been put and  
3 answered. That is repetition.

4 CAPTAIN BROOKS: I was asked by associate  
5 counsel to ask that question. I hadn't heard it  
6 myself, your Honor. I think you are thinking about  
7 Manchuria. We were talking about Outer Mongolia.

8 THE PRESIDENT: The question was put gener-  
9 ally before on the control exercised by the Central  
10 Government over the troops in the outside areas.

11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 Q General, where did you receive your training  
2 as a staff officer?

3 THE PRESIDENT: The answer cannot help us.

4 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I won't ask  
5 any further on cross-examination. I would like, as a  
6 matter of information now to know if on our defense we  
7 will be limited in showing the conditions previous to  
8 when the shooting began, involving the question of who  
9 supplied the weapons; the arms, the munitions and  
10 materials -- with which war was engaged with these  
11 various rebels and bandits -- were used to kill Japanese  
12 citizens and to violate their property rights. I be-  
13 lieve it is very material.

14 THE PRESIDENT: We want to understand the de-  
15 fense fully, but this line of cross-examination is not  
16 helping us to understand the defense.

17 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, in a criminal  
18 case you are allowed to go back into the motive as to  
19 who furnished the weapons, whether it was conspiracy  
20 and what was said before the shooting actually took  
21 place. This is a criminal case, and it is very im-  
22 portant to know what large commercial interest and  
23 what other interests -- black markets or undercover  
24 agents or otherwise -- were furnishing arms of which  
25 Japan complained numerous times, not only to China,



CHING

CROSS

1 but to other nations of the world. It is possible  
2 that this is not the proper time, on cross-examination,  
3 to ask that type of question. I understand I have been  
4 refused to cross-examine along those lines. However,  
5 the question for a point of information was: Is the  
6 defense proper in going ahead and preparing this as  
7 a matter of defense evidence along that line, to show  
8 the relationship between Japan and China, and the  
9 damage that was caused to Japan by these conditions  
10 that prevailed, and powerful commercial interests in  
11 their marketing various arms and supplies -- petroleum  
12 and war materials -- that was allowing this strife to  
13 continue over this long period of years -- fifteen  
14 years before 1931.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Well, put your questions, and  
16 I will say whether they will be allowed or disallowed.  
17 Put your question, and I will say whether it is allowed  
18 or not.

19 Q Mr. Witness, hasn't there been a constant  
20 growing or increase in tension and antipathy between  
21 the Chinese and Japanese since the year 1900, and a  
22 desire by the National Government or Central Government  
23 of China for the retrenchment of certain territories  
24 which it has lost previously?

25 THE PRESIDENT: I suppose "retrenchment" means

CHING

CROSS

1 recovery.

2 MR. BROOKS: Recovery.

3 THE PRESIDENT: I think it somewhat remote,  
4 but I will not prevent the witness from answering.

5 A Ever since the Sino-Japanese War, it was but  
6 evident that the Chinese people as a whole were trying  
7 their best to live up to the standards of a modern  
8 world. It was not the desire of the Chinese people --  
9 Chinese Government -- to recover their lost territory  
10 right then, but it was the desire of the Chinese Govern-  
11 ment to have the national strength consolidated, and  
12 put the nation on a modern basis. I said that the  
13 Chinese Government was realizing its feeble strength,  
14 but was not prepared to recovery the lost territory.  
15 This can be proved by the fact that while the Chinese  
16 not as a whole resented the imposing by the Japanese  
17 of the twenty-one demands on China, the Chinese Govern-  
18 ment has very, very reluctantly accepted it. Due to the  
19 fact that Japanese aggression knew no bounds, and the  
20 fact that the Chinese Government then was a very weak  
21 one, the Chinese people rose and put out this foreign  
22 expeditionary force, and had that Government thrown out.

23 Q The weakness of the Chinese Government, though,  
24 was not the only reason why foreign nations found it  
25 necessary to keep troops stationed in China; is that true?

CHING

CROSS

1 A Only Japan took that advantage of stationing  
2 troops there; other nations didn't.

3 Q Mr. Witness, as a result of the Boxer Protocol,  
4 other nations had troops there, but even beside that  
5 reason and the activities of bandits and rebels being  
6 prevalent in China over this long period of years,  
7 weren't there still other reasons why foreign nations  
8 had troops stationed in China? If you know of them, I  
9 would like to have them stated.

10 THE PRESIDENT: You should suggest the reasons,  
11 if you know them, and not leave him guessing. This cross-  
12 examination is most unenlightening.

13 MR. BROOKS: May he answer that question, if  
14 he knows?

15 THE PRESIDENT: I do not expect him to answer it.  
16 You suggest the reasons, and he may or may not adopt  
17 them. That is the correct way.

18 Q Mr. Witness, would it not be a reasonable  
19 apprehension, that could be entertained by the Japanese  
20 residents as a result of numerous incidents, that  
21 another Boxer uprising might be imminent?

22 THE PRESIDENT: The state of China from 1900  
23 on is not relevant, and is too remote. What we want to  
24 discover is the state of China as of the times when  
25 the Japanese took action, when the Japanese armed forces

CHING

CROSS

1 began to operate. The conditions then are the things  
2 that we want to know. You cannot go back forty years.

3 MR. BROOKS: In this case, the shooting  
4 started in '31 on a large scale, but since it is a  
5 criminal case I have considered -- the defense has  
6 considered -- it relevant to show the conditions giv-  
7 ing rise to the mounting blood pressures in the various  
8 countries -- of nationals -- their apprehensions and  
9 fears, their conflicting commercial interests, and to  
10 show that hostilities, although not openly declared,  
11 started long before this period as shown by numerous  
12 incidents -- several hundred has been testified to by the  
13 prosecution's own witness here.

14 THE PRESIDENT: I would suggest to you, with  
15 all respect, I hate to say anything that may appear  
16 offensive to counsel, more particularly to American  
17 counsel who are practically strangers to me, that you  
18 frame your questions more carefully, and with a view to  
19 assisting the Court, keeping in mind that it is your duty  
20 to assist the Court.

21 We will recess now until thirty minutes past  
22 one.

23 (Whereupon, at 1200, a recess was taken  
24 until 1330, after which the proceedings were re-  
25 sumed as follows:)

CHING

CROSS

## AFTERNOON SESSION

1 The Tribunal met, pursuant to recess, at 1338.

2  
3 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
4 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

5 CHING TEH - CHUN, called as a witness on  
6 behalf of the prosecution, resumed the stand and  
7 testified as follows:

8 BY MR. BROOKS (Continuing):

9 Q Mr. Witness, previous to 1937, did you, as  
10 a representative of China in that area ever request  
11 any assistance of Japanese, or even of Chinese troops,  
12 from other areas for the purpose of policing your  
13 area of responsibility and maintaining peace and order  
14 therein?

15 A I am not quite clear about the question  
16 you ask.

17 THE PRESIDENT: Witness, did you ever seek  
18 the assistance of the Japanese or other Chinese to  
19 maintain order in your particular district?

20 THE WITNESS: No.

21 Q Prior to 1937, Mr. Witness, do you know  
22 whether General Chiang Kai-shek or any other Chinese  
23  
24  
25

G  
o  
l  
d  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

CHING

CROSS

1 officials requested financial or any other type of  
2 assistance to restore peace and order in China and  
3 in your area or North China?

4 A What do you mean? I don't quite under-  
5 stand your question. Do you mean the Generalissimo  
6 and other generals requested my assistance or requested  
7 the assistance from Japanese side?

8 Q The latter. Wasn't Japanese national assis-  
9 tance sought and wasn't Japanese troops requested  
10 to be given as policing troops for your areas as  
11 well as other nations consulted by your officials  
12 on reports made from your areas and various other  
13 areas in order to restore peace and order to the  
14 whole of China?

15 A (Interpreter): He is answering to the first  
16 of your question. He said: "There was no request made  
17 in regard to military troops but there was some dis-  
18 sension about economic collaboration. But, that is,  
19 economic collaboration was suggested by the Japanese  
20 side."

21 Q Did this economic collaboration that you  
22 speak of involve any dealings in war materials, arms,  
23 ammunition, to give assistance to any of the opposing  
24 factions in China on the part of an association of  
25 Japanese businessmen or any company or corporation of

CHING

CROSS

1 Japan? If so, please name them.

2 A No.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Captain Brooks, it must be  
4 obvious to you from the trouble the interpreters are  
5 getting that your questions are far too long, to say  
6 the least.

7 MR. BROOKS: I will try to ask shorter ones,  
8 your Honor. I have made them fairly long so the  
9 complete idea would be expressed without a series of  
10 short questions that might not have any meaning to  
11 the Court.

12 Q During this period of trouble in China, in the  
13 civil war previous to 1937, did China have outside  
14 resources for war materials, weapons and equipment?  
15 Do you know what they were?

16 A I don't know anything about it.

17 Q Was the arms and ammunition used by you  
18 and your armies and by the opposing factions that  
19 you were in conflict with previous to 1937 all of  
20 Chinese make or manufacture?

21 THE PRESIDENT: What bearing on the issue  
22 has the origin of the Chinese war material?

23 MR. BROOKS: I have heard, if your Honor  
24 please, I know, and we will show in evidence what the  
25 Japanese opinion has been of the conditions prevailing

CHING

CROSS

1 prior to this outbreak of war and of the various  
2 commercial interests involved there.

3 THE PRESIDENT: You have not answered my  
4 question. I want to know what bearing on the issue  
5 the origin of the Chinese war material has.

6 MR. BROOKS: It is difficult with this con-  
7 stant interruption from the interpretation, but I  
8 wanted to add further that I wanted to find from the  
9 Chinese side, from a hostile, evident hostile witness  
10 in this case to the defense, the interests that they  
11 said, if there were any of the members of the Zaibatsu  
12 of Japan not represented by these accused who were  
13 responsible for the conflict of commercial interests;  
14 and it has a bearing in this case. In Exhibit No. 199,  
15 prosecution paper 2340, in the discussion which was  
16 a current topic at that time among Asiatics, was  
17 whether European and American influences should be  
18 expelled and a discussion of what would take place,  
19 whether they would be Japanese or otherwise. It has  
20 been shown recently that the Civil War in China has  
21 been prolonged by furnishing materials. I think it  
22 will be shown that materials were furnished the Japan-  
23 ese that made this war possible, that these various  
24 interests in conflict created a situation that was  
25 causing the loss of lives of Japanese residents and



1 destruction of property of which Japan had through  
2 various negotiations in over three hundred instances  
3 by diplomatic measures, even going to the League of  
4 Nations, and finally withdrawing because she was not  
5 given any assistance, was forced to take action.

6 The defense feels that it has a responsibility  
7 to put forth these conditions and facts surrounding  
8 the charges, surrounding the conditions and actions  
9 taking place which might have influenced the defendants  
10 in making certain decisions and which will explain  
11 and cast, possibly, a different light on the acts  
12 taken by the various parties and tend to justify,  
13 mitigate or even shift the responsibility to others  
14 for what happened.

15 THE PRESIDENT: We don't permit you to  
16 indulge in these generalities. Your question must  
17 be directed to specific matters. No counsel ever  
18 attempts to do what you are trying to do. You are  
19 simply wasting time. Whenever I ask you for specific  
20 information, what your questions are directed to,  
21 what evidence you have to back them up, you indulge  
22 in a general address. That is not permitted to any  
23 counsel.

24 MR. BROOKS: The questions, if the Court  
25 please, that I am asking are not in relation to a

CHING

CROSS

1 specific thing. They are in relation to general  
2 conditions which require a general answer to the  
3 Court's instruction as to what I am trying to show.  
4 I will go to another point.

5 THE PRESIDENT: Your attitude is so utterly  
6 unreasonable that it is difficult to control in the  
7 ordinary way. Counsel rarely puts a court in that  
8 situation.

9 MR. BROOKS: If I have offended the Court,  
10 I wish to apologize. It may be a difference in  
11 customs in presenting a case. In the cases that  
12 I have tried in American courts, the counsel is  
13 allowed uninterruptedly to present cross-examination  
14 in defense as long as he thinks it is material and  
15 later will try to connect it up; and if it is not  
16 material and not connected up, the Court at that  
17 time rules it out of order or strikes it for failure  
18 to tie it up. I wish to apologize.

19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

M  
O  
R  
R  
O  
W  
&  
A  
B  
R  
A  
M

1 Q Were there not, Mr. Witness, officers, in  
2 1937, of the armies of other nations attached to these  
3 various Chinese units as observers, consultants,  
4 directors, and as active participants in the military  
5 action at that time and previous thereto?

6 COLONEL MORROW: We object on the ground of  
7 relevancy and immateriality, if your Honor please.

8 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I think it  
9 would be very relevant to show what officers, how  
10 many, and what their activities were previous to this  
11 time. I am asking about 1937, previous to 1937, and  
12 also previous to 1941. There has been, also, much dis-  
13 cussion in the papers and in various diplomatic  
14 addresses about forcing Japan to commit the first  
15 overt act, and I think the first overt act, as the  
16 prosecution has presented it, has been as of 1941 in  
17 some cases against some nations, and 1931 in others,  
18 and I think this line of questioning may bring out  
19 certain other conditions that may very well be regarded  
20 as an overt act which led to an aggressive policy,  
21 against which Japan was finally forced to take  
22 defensive action.

23 THE PRESIDENT: The question is disallowed.

24 Q In your discussion with Mr. MATSUI, set out  
25 on page 4 of exhibit 199, when you discussed the

CHING

CROSS

1 European and American influences that should be  
2 expelled and the Japanese attitude, was there any  
3 discussion as to the hold on Asia's markets and  
4 resources having anything to do with the Japanese  
5 attitude and expression "Asia for the Asiatics?" If  
6 so, state what it was.

7 I am going to reframe the question, if you  
8 please. I can make that shorter.

9 THE PRESIDENT: The Court will now recess  
10 in order to consider their position.

11 (Whereupon, at 1410, a recess was  
12 taken until 1430, after which the proceedings  
13 were resumed as follows:)

14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

CHING

CROSS

D  
u  
d  
a  
3  
4  
W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n

DEPUTY MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now resumed.

THE PRESIDENT: The Tribunal has decided that in the future all cross-examination shall be limited to matters arising in the examination in chief.

MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I would only like to make one observation and that is on exhibit 199. There was a discussion by MATSUI referred to as to Asia should be the Asia of the Asiatics, and that European and American influences should be expelled. And my line of questioning has been in line with the witness' own affidavit in which a discussion was made of these vital factors of which Japan had complained, and which are the bases and the features of this world holocaust that should be pointed out and condemned by this Tribunal.

THE PRESIDENT: Is that the end of the cross-examination?

MR. BROOKS: No further cross-examination of this witness.

COLONEL MORROW: If your Honor please, we have no direct examination.

THE PRESIDENT: There is only one question I should ask of the witness.

Have you any reason to doubt the genuineness

CHING

CROSS

1 of the TANAKA Memorial?

2 MR. FURNESS: Does that--

3 THE PRESIDENT: Now, let the witness answer.

4 THE WITNESS: I cannot prove that it is a true  
5 one, but at the same time I also have no means to dis-  
6 prove it. But as the development we have witnessed in  
7 the latter stages of Japanese aggression it seems to me  
8 that the author TANAKA had made himself a very good  
9 profit.

10 THE MONITOR: English supplements: If TANAKA  
11 Memorial was untrue, was cooked up, everything predicted  
12 in it has been carried out.

13 THE PRESIDENT: Major Furness.

14 MR. FURNESS: My objection, sir, was to the  
15 question put by the President, that it assumed that there  
16 had been any proof that such a memorial existed. As far  
17 as this case has gone I think there has been no such  
18 proof.

19 THE PRESIDENT: The question is put in the  
20 interests of the defense.

21 MR. FURNESS: Thank you, sir.

22 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: May it please the Tribunal,  
23 in the interest of the defense, may I ask this witness  
24 just one question concerning the TANAKA Memorial?

25 THE PRESIDENT: No. We were told there was no

CHING

CROSS

1 further cross-examination.

2 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: All right, your Honor.

3 THE PRESIDENT: We will keep to that.

4 Now, there is another question that I--

5 Which of the two HASHIMOTOS, if either, is the  
6 accused? The witness referred to two in his exam-  
7 ination in chief.

8 THE WITNESS: Neither of them, of the  
9 HASHIMOTOS I mentioned in the written statement, can  
10 be identified with the HASHIMOTO accused in this case.

11 MR. BROOKS: Your Honor, I was going to  
12 point out he previously testified that neither of them  
13 were this man.

14 THE PRESIDENT: Is there any further re-  
15 examination?

16 Mr. Smith.

17 MR. SMITH: Your Honor, evidently the Court  
18 came back unexpectedly and most of the Japanese  
19 counsel were out of the room when you made the  
20 ruling. Could we have the reporter read that back  
21 for their benefit?

22 THE PRESIDENT: Counsel who were in the room  
23 are quite capable of advising those who were not.

24 COLONEL MORROW: I understand this witness  
25 may be dismissed, if the Court please?

THE PRESIDENT: The witness may go.

CHING

CROSS

1 DEPUTY MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The witness will  
2 sign this oath: "I swear that the testimony I have given  
3 is a true statement."

4 (Whereupon, a document was signed by  
5 the witness.)

6 THE PRESIDENT: The Representative of China  
7 advises me that that is the Chinese form.

8 (Whereupon, the witness was excused.)

9 COLONEL MORROW: If the Court please, pursuant  
10 to a permission of this Court to take certain witnesses  
11 out of turn from the Republic of China, I desire to  
12 present for that purpose further, Mr. David Nelson  
13 Sutton of the bar of West Point, Virginia, and of the  
14 bar of the Supreme Court of the United States, a member  
15 of the prosecution staff, who will present certain wit-  
16 nesses from China out of order, with the permission of  
17 this Court.

18 THE PRESIDENT: For the information of other  
19 Members of the Tribunal you might explain what you mean  
20 by out of order.

21 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal, the  
22 witnesses are presented without at this time presenting  
23 certain documents which would normally have been pre-  
24 sented. The witnesses are presented one after the other.  
25 The evidence will be connected up later.



1 THE PRESIDENT: I understand these witnesses  
2 will deal with matters which ordinarily would have been  
3 presented at later stages, but I had no idea you were  
4 going to dispense with documents.

5 MR. SUTTON: We are not presenting any docu-  
6 ments except the affidavits of the witnesses.

7 THE PRESIDENT: That microphone is in a bad  
8 position. We have the greatest difficulty hearing  
9 counsel at that lectern.

10 MR. SUTTON: The statement which I made was  
11 that we are not at this time presenting any documents  
12 except the statement of the witness.

13 THE PRESIDENT: Well, proceed.

14 MR. FURNESS: If the Court please, my recollec-  
15 tion of the Court's order was that because certain wit-  
16 nesses were here in Japan and wanted to return to China,  
17 that the testimony of those witnesses could be put on  
18 out of order. That is, they could interrupt the phase  
19 on which they were offering proof and put in the evidence  
20 of other witnesses who might not be available here in  
21 Japan.

22 My recollection further is that the names of  
23 those three witnesses were General Ching, who has just  
24 testified, and Mr. Dorrance, and Mr. Fitch, and that  
25 those are the only three witnesses to whom that order

1 applied.

2 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Court, these  
3 witnesses whom we are offering at this time have been  
4 here in response to summons issued by this Court since  
5 the 12th of June. One, the next witness, was brought  
6 from the United States of America, the rest from the  
7 Republic of China. Their own circumstances are such  
8 that they cannot remain longer without great embar-  
9 rassment. They testify with regard to certain phases of  
10 the war in China as to which the Court has been hearing  
11 testimony for the last several days.

12 MR. FURNESS: The Court has been hearing the  
13 testimony of one witness to whom the order of the Court  
14 applied. I say with that reservation that the testimony  
15 of the witnesses of whom Mr. Sutton now speaks was not  
16 the subject of the Court's order. It applied to two  
17 other witnesses. We are not prepared on these witnesses  
18 which he plans to call now.

19 MR. SUTTON: Not only were the statements of  
20 these witnesses distributed to defense counsel, but the  
21 defense counsel were given the names of the particular  
22 witnesses who will be next called, these names having  
23 been furnished to them the first of this week at the  
24 time General Ching was called.

25 THE PRESIDENT: The defense will not be taken

1 by surprise, Major Furness.

2 MR. FURNESS: I do object to his statement  
3 that these witnesses are being put on pursuant to a  
4 Court order. They are not. And I wish the prosecution  
5 would admit that.

6 I think Colonel Warren wants to say something.

7 MR. WARREN: Let the record show it is Mr. War-  
8 ren.

9 If the Tribunal please, in a sense, yes, we are  
10 caught unprepared. The mere presentation of an affidavit  
11 to us has no indication as to when that witness will be  
12 called. Your Honor realizes, and as I know all the  
13 Members of the Tribunal do realize, that because of the  
14 exigencies of time that has existed throughout, we have  
15 had to prepare our case as the case progressed.

16 Ordinarily there would be no objection to tak-  
17 ing a witness out of turn if we were notified in time  
18 so that we may proceed ahead of ourselves in preparing  
19 that particular phase of the case. We cannot understand  
20 how any witness can be embarrassed by being required to  
21 wait a few days on one of the highest tribunals that  
22 the world has ever known. It seems strange to us that  
23 the prosecution did not inform this Tribunal at the time  
24 that they asked for the other witnesses to be taken out  
25 of turn in order that the defense could be prepared.

1 We can take no other view except that they are trying  
2 to take advantage of a situation. That is our unalter-  
3 able view, sir.

4 THE PRESIDENT: The only question is whether  
5 you are prepared to cross-examine. You have not stressed  
6 the fact that you are not.

7 MR. WARREN: Sir, we are not.

8 THE PRESIDENT: Dr. KIYOSE.

9 DR. KIYOSE: May I speak a few words on behalf  
10 of the Japanese counsel?

11 Actually speaking, this Tribunal is now under-  
12 taking a review of the Manchurian phase of the question.  
13 However, as Major Furness has already pointed out, three  
14 witnesses have been called from China, one of whom is  
15 an important official, and others have very important  
16 business waiting for them in China to the extent that  
17 the Tribunal has said that a master commissioner would  
18 be asked -- to the extent that prosecution asked for  
19 a master commissioner. To this request the Court, in-  
20 stead of nominating a master commissioner, has made a  
21 ruling of reviewing the case, actually, at this time  
22 here and it is according to that that the present trial  
23 is now in progress.

24 One of these three witnesses, namely General  
25 Ching Teh-chun, has already been cross-examined.

1 Following that we have been expecting Mr. Fitch and  
2 Mr. Dorrance to appear on the witness stand and have  
3 been preparing for them ever since this morning. We  
4 would like to know, Mr. President, what shall we do  
5 about taking evidence from Messrs. Fitch and Dorrance?

6           One other point which I wish to present to the  
7 Court is that one of the causes for the confusion here  
8 is that witnesses are introduced out of order. If  
9 witnesses are to be examined with respect to the China  
10 Incident, then if an opening statement on the China  
11 Incident would be presented by the prosecution at the  
12 outset, then it would very greatly clarify the position  
13 and attitude of the prosecution and enabling us, the  
14 members of the defense counsel, to prepare and carry on  
15 our case.

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 In connection with the China Incident, the  
2 charges made are with respect to military aggression,  
3 economic aggression, to the use of narcotics, and  
4 other harmful drugs as well as atrocities. Unless  
5 some clarification is made by the prosecution on how  
6 they are going to handle these charges and produce  
7 their witnesses out of order, it puts us into a very  
8 difficult position and creates confusion in this Court.

9 As the honorable Mr. President has already  
10 stated -- asked of us, we are indeed most anxious  
11 to cooperate with this Tribunal. From the standpoint  
12 of our own responsibility in the handling of the  
13 cases on hand, we should like to ask the Tribunal to  
14 establish a fixed system in order that the proceed-  
15 ings of this Court may progress smoothly. It is re-  
16 gretful that since yesterday the proceedings have  
17 not been going on smoothly.

18 Japanese counsel respectfully asks the Tri-  
19 bunal to make an appropriate ruling in order to assure  
20 smoothness in the proceedings. The carrying out of  
21 our responsibility -- our desire to carry out our  
22 responsibility is also with respect -- also should  
23 be taken as our responsibility to the people of Japan.

24 THE PRESIDENT: The case is divided into  
25 sections by order of the Court, and the Court may

1 modify its order. Instead of having this evidence  
2 taken by Commission, the Court has decided to take it  
3 itself. Nothing more than that has happened. There  
4 has been no confusion, and there will be none on that  
5 account. The real question is whether the defense  
6 are in position to examine the witnesses that will  
7 now be called, and it appears they have had ample  
8 notice.

9 Is this witness from the United States a  
10 long witness?

11 MR. SUTTON: He is, sir, on direct examin-  
12 ation, a very short witness. His statement is con-  
13 tained on three pages.

14 THE PRESIDENT: We will hear his evidence  
15 in chief this afternoon, and, if necessary, we will  
16 postpone his cross-examination until tomorrow. That  
17 ought to meet the position of the defense.

18 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, I  
19 would like to correct one impression -- I think  
20 wrong impression -- the Tribunal has. We were not  
21 notified that they intended to call these witnesses.  
22 They serve us with affidavits, and maybe it would be  
23 weeks -- I mean a document, and maybe it would be  
24 weeks before they come up in Court. So much for  
25 that phase.

1 We should not have objected had we been  
2 told. However, we are in Court without these  
3 affidavits, and we are forced at this time to ask  
4 the Tribunal to give us a ten minute recess to go  
5 pick up these statements from our office.

6 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal, I  
7 called the administrative office of defense counsel  
8 myself on Tuesday afternoon, talked to Commander  
9 Harris, and told him at that time, pursuant to a  
10 request made by Mr. Logan of defense counsel to Mr.  
11 Carlisle Higgins, Acting Chief of Counsel for the  
12 prosecution, on the morning of that day -- told  
13 Commander Harris that the witness whom the prosecu-  
14 tion would offer, following the testimony of General  
15 Ching, was Dr. Robert O. Wilson. I gave him the  
16 document number of Dr. Wilson's affidavit and also  
17 told him the name of the other witnesses who would be  
18 offered following Dr. Wilson.

19 THE PRESIDENT: The defense cannot be  
20 prejudiced if the examination in chief is taken this  
21 afternoon. We will take the examination in chief  
22 this afternoon.

23 MR. WARREN: There is no controversy on  
24 that, sir. We just want a ten minute recess to run  
25 and get our documents. May we have that, sir?



WILSON

DIRECT

1 THE PRESIDENT: Yes, proceed. Call the  
2 witness.

3 - - -

4 R O B E R T O. W I L S O N, called as a witness  
5 on behalf of the prosecution, being first duly  
6 sworn, testified as follows:

7 DIRECT EXAMINATION

8 BY MR. SUTTON:

9 Q Are you Dr. Robert O. Wilson of Arcadia,  
10 California?

11 A I am.

12 Q I hand you a statement marked IPS document  
13 No. 2246 and ask if you signed it and made affidavit  
14 to that.

15 A This is my affidavit, and I signed it.

16 MR. SUTTON: We ask that this be filed as  
17 an exhibit.

18 CLERK OF THE COURT: Prosecution's document  
19 2246 is given exhibit No. 204.

20 (Whereupon, the document above  
21 referred to was marked prosecution's ex-  
22 hibit No. 204 for identification.)

23 MR. LEVIN: Mr. President, we would like  
24 to object to the use of this affidavit as an exhibit  
25 in this case or as the testimony of this witness.

WILSON

DIRECT

1 We believe that none of the reasons assigned by the  
2 Court for permitting the use of affidavits in this  
3 case are applicable to this witness. The witness is  
4 a graduate of Princeton and Harvard Universities and  
5 a well educated man and speaks English as well as  
6 anyone in this courtroom.

7 When the Court announced -- when the  
8 President announced the decision of the Court to  
9 permit affidavits, it stated that it did so with  
10 grave misgivings. We have no situation with this  
11 witness that is applicable to any of the other wit-  
12 nesses who have appeared -- that is, those who spoke  
13 either Chinese or Japanese. Under these circumstances  
14 we believe that the witness should be directed -- that  
15 the testimony of the witness should be offered by  
16 question and answer.

17 THE PRESIDENT: There is no need for you  
18 to say any more. We will hear what you have to say,  
19 Mr. Sutton. We see no reason why this man's evidence  
20 in chief should not be taken in the ordinary way.  
21 There is nothing we can think of to justify this  
22 departure except the mere fact that you have pre-  
23 pared an affidavit.

24 You can treat that as the proof of his  
25 evidence and examine him from it. The objection is

WILSON

DIRECT

sustained.

1  
2 MR. SUTTON: We had understood, may it  
3 please the Tribunal, that we should in each case  
4 offer the affidavit of the witness in order to  
5 shorten the proceedings and then offer the witness  
6 for cross-examination.

7 THE PRESIDENT: It was offered in evidence,  
8 there was no objection, and the Court couldn't re-  
9 ject it. But it is desirable that the witness  
10 should now be examined in chief as though his affi-  
11 davit was a mere proof of his evidence.

12 MR. LEVIN: Mr. President, my objection to  
13 the affidavit -- I offered it as an objection to the  
14 affidavit. I assumed that that was the proper time  
15 to make the objection, when it was offered in evi-  
16 dence.

17 THE PRESIDENT: It was already in evidence  
18 and marked when you objected, but we may be pre-  
19 pared to sustain the objection and reject the affi-  
20 davit. We can always do that.

21 MR. LEVIN: If the Court please, my object-  
22 ion was based according to practice to which I am  
23 accustomed. In our practice, when the exhibit is  
24 offered it is not considered in evidence. At the  
25 time it was offered I thought I made my proper

WILSON

DIRECT

1 objection to it. I now object to it. I thought I  
2 had objected to it, and I ask that the Court sustain  
3 our objection to the use of this affidavit.

4 THE PRESIDENT: We can treat your objection  
5 as made nunc pro tunc and uphold it. We will reject  
6 the affidavit.

7 The Page had better collect the affidavits  
8 from the judges.

9 MR. SUTTON: Shall I proceed with the  
10 examination, if the Tribunal please?

11 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

12 BY MR. SUTTON (Continued):

13 Q Dr. Wilson, when and where were you born?

14 A I was born in Nanking, China, October 5,  
15 1906.

16 Q What is your profession, and where did you  
17 receive your education?

18 A I am a surgeon. I received my education at  
19 Princeton University and Harvard Medical School.

20 Q Following your graduation in medicine, did  
21 you return to China, and, if so, during what period  
22 did you practice medicine in the Republic of China?

23 A I returned to China in January, 1936 and  
24 practiced medicine at the University Hospital in  
25 Nanking, China from that time until August of 1940.

WILSON

DIRECT

1 Q Were you connected with the University  
2 Hospital in Nanking, and, if so, in what capacity?

3 A I was an Associate in Surgery at the Uni-  
4 versity Hospital in Nanking.

5 Q Did the Chinese doctors and nurses on the  
6 staff of the hospital leave the hospital in the  
7 Fall of 1937 and, if so, when?

8 MR. McMANUS: If your Honor please, for the  
9 record, I object to that question -- to the form of  
10 the question, and also on the grounds it is very  
11 leading, and request that the President shall in-  
12 struct the counsel to conduct his examination not by  
13 asking leading questions and asking them in the proper  
14 form.

15 THE PRESIDENT: These are merely introduct-  
16 ory matters upon which he may well be permitted to  
17 lead.

18 A Late in November, 1937, after the fall of  
19 Shanghai, when the Japanese Army was approaching  
20 Nanking, the nurses and doctors of our staff came to  
21 us with the request that they be allowed to proceed  
22 up-river and not remain in Nanking when the city  
23 was taken by the Japanese soldiers. Their reason for  
24 doing this was because of the stories that they heard  
25 about the happenings in the cities between Shanghai

and Nanking. These cities were specifically Su-Chou, Wu-Hsi, Chen-Kiang, Tang-Yang, among others.

Our staff feared for their lives and wished to leave, and we attempted to calm their fears by saying that under martial law they would have nothing to fear in Nanking after the city fell. We were unable to convince them, however, and they left to up-river, leaving the hospital with Dr. Trimmer, another American doctor, and myself, five nurses who elected to remain behind, and some of the servant class who elected to stay with us. They left the city about the first of December. All together, about twenty Chinese doctors and some forty or fifty nurses and student nurses left.

Q To what number had the patients in the hospital been reduced immediately prior to the fall of the city of Nanking?

A When our staff left we were forced to reduce the number of patients to the irreducible limit and sent home all who could possibly go home, leaving about fifty patients in the hospital who either had no place to go or were too sick to move.

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

and Nanking. These cities were specifically Su-Chou, Wu-Hsi, Chen-Kiang, Tang-Yang, among others.

Our staff feared for their lives and wished to leave, and we attempted to calm their fears by saying that under martial law they would have nothing to fear in Nanking after the city fell. We were unable to convince them, however, and they left to up-river, leaving the hospital with Dr. Trimmer, another American doctor, and myself, five nurses who elected to remain behind, and some of the servant class who elected to stay with us. They left the city about the first of December. All together, about twenty Chinese doctors and some forty or fifty nurses and student nurses left.

Q To what number had the patients in the hospital been reduced immediately prior to the fall of the city of Nanking?

A When our staff left we were forced to reduce the number of patients to the irreducible limit and sent home all who could possibly go home, leaving about fifty patients in the hospital who either had no place to go or were too sick to move.

WILSON

DIRECT

W 1 Q Did the situation change following December 13,  
O 2 1937; and if so, in what manner?  
l 3  
f 4

& 5 A The Japanese soldiers entered the city on the  
4 morning of the 13th of December, all resistance having  
S 5 ceased on the night of the 12th. Within a very days  
p 6 the hospital filled up rapidly with many, many cases  
r 7 of injury to men, women and children of all ages, and  
a 8 of all degrees.  
t 9

9 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I think  
10 it is objectionable. I think the Court--

11 THE PRESIDENT: I cannot hear you. Talk  
12 through the microphone.

13 MR. BROOKS: If the Court please, I think this  
14 line of questioning is objectionable, and I think it  
15 is made for the possibility of influencing the Members  
16 of the Court and that the Court can very well take  
17 judicial notice, and I think the defense would be  
18 willing to agree that in any war there will be casualties  
19 among civilians -- women, children and others-- otherwise,  
20 if such purpose is not shown, I move it should be stricken  
21 from the record.

22 THE PRESIDENT: The objection is overruled.  
23 Proceed.

24 MR. BROOKS: I would like to enter a further  
25 objection, on the ground of immateriality and irrel-

WILSON

DIRECT

1 evancy to the issue they are trying to show -- who caused  
2 the war. If this had anything to do with it, I don't  
3 see where it is material.

4 THE PRESIDENT: The objection is overruled.

5 Q Doctor, will you give specific instances of  
6 the types of injuries which had been received by the  
7 persons whom you treated at the hospital?

8 A I can say the few instances of patients that  
9 I treated during the time immediately following the fall  
10 of Nanking, but I will not be able to give their names,  
11 except in the case of two, who are here as witnesses.

12 One case that comes to my mind is that of a  
13 woman of forty, who was brought to the hospital with  
14 the back of her neck having a laceration severing all  
15 the muscles of the neck, and leaving the head very  
16 precariously balanced. From direct questioning of the  
17 patient, and from those who brought her in, there was  
18 no --

19 MR. MATTICE: I would like to interrupt this  
20 witness to object; first, for the reason that, obvious-  
21 ly, what the witness is about to say is heresy;  
22 secondly, it is not in response to the question which  
23 was asked him. He was asked to describe the wounds  
24 which he saw and he now undertakes to tell what the  
25 woman told him.



WILSON

DIRECT

1 THE PRESIDENT: The objection is overruled.  
2 The objection to heresay has been overruled repeated-  
3 ly.

4 A (Continuing) Upon direct questioning of the  
5 woman, and from the story of those who brought her in,  
6 there was no doubt in our minds that the work was  
7 that of a Japanese soldier.

8 THE PRESIDENT: He ought to say what the  
9 woman told him.

10 A (Continuing) A young boy of eight was  
11 brought in with a deep penetrating wound of the  
12 abdomen, which pierced his stomach.

13 MR. WARREN: If your Honor please, I was  
14 about to object on the same grounds that your Honor  
15 called to the attention of the witness; that he  
16 should state what the patient is alleged to have told  
17 him, instead of his conclusions, and let the Court  
18 draw the conclusion. We respectfully request the  
19 Tribunal to request the witness to state, as near as  
20 he recalls, the conversations he had with these patients.

21 THE PRESIDENT: The objections are sustained.

22 (Addressing Mr. Sutton) I do not think you  
23 are hearing me. You will not hear me unless you wear  
24 those headphones.

25 I said the witness must state what con-

WILSON

DIRECT

1       versations he had with those wounded people.

2           A (Continuing) A man was admitted with a  
3       wound through the right shoulder, obviously a bullet  
4       wound, and --

5           THE WITNESS: If the Court pleases, I  
6       can tell his story as he told it to me then. Is  
7       that what I understand? --

8           A (Continuing) He was one -- the only survivor  
9       of a large group of men who were taken to the river  
10      bank of the Yangtze River and individually shot. The  
11      bodies were pushed into the river, and hence the  
12      actual number cannot be ascertained. But he feigned  
13      death, crept away in the darkness, and came to the  
14      hospital. This man's name was Liang.

15           Another man was a Chinese policeman and was  
16      brought to the hospital with a very deep laceration  
17      across the middle of his back. He was the only sur-  
18      vivor of a large group taken outside the city wall,  
19      who were also first machine-gunned and the wounded  
20      were then pierced with bayonets to be sure that they  
21      were dead. That man's name was Wu Chang-teh.

22           One noon I was having lunch in my house, when  
23      the neighbors rushed in and told us, at the table, that  
24      some Japanese soldiers were raping the women in their  
25      house.

MR. WARREN: If your Honor please, that

WILSON

DIRECT

1 obviously is not an answer to the question that was  
2 propounded to this witness and we request that he be  
3 required to answer the question and undoubtedly the  
4 prosecution will bring those out in further questioning.

5 THE PRESIDENT: He should confine his answers  
6 to the questions, but I do not think he infringed  
7 very seriously. These are all related matters. The  
8 objection is overruled.

9 A (Continuing) We rushed out of the house to accom-  
10 pany the men back to their own house, and the people  
11 in the courtyard pointed to the closed door of the  
12 gate-house. Three Japanese soldiers stood about in the  
13 courtyard with their bayonets. We pushed in the  
14 door of the gate-house, and found two Japanese soldiers  
15 in the act of raping two Chinese women. We took the  
16 women to the University of Nanking Refugee -- the campus  
17 where there was a large group of refugees, under the  
18 supervision of the International Refugee Committee.

19 A man came into the hospital with a bullet  
20 through his jaw, barely able to talk. About two-  
21 thirds of his body was very badly burned. His story,  
22 as nearly as we could make it out, was that he had been  
23 seized by Japanese soldiers, shot, covered with gaso-  
24 line, and set afire. He died two days later.

25 Another man was admitted with a very severe

WILSON

DIRECT

1 burn covering his entire head and shoulders. While  
2 still able to talk, he told us that he was the only  
3 survivor of a large group who had been bound together,  
4 had gasoline sprayed over them, and were set afire.

5 We have pictures of these particular cases,  
6 that I have mentioned so far.

7 An old man of sixty was admitted with a  
8 bayonet wound in his chest. His story was that he had  
9 gone from the refugee zone back into the other part of  
10 the city to look for a relative. He met a Japanese  
11 soldier who bayoneted him in the chest and threw him in  
12 the gutter for dead. He recovered six hours later --  
13 he recovered consciousness six hours later and was able  
14 to get to the hospital.

15 Cases like this continued to come in for a  
16 matter of some six or seven weeks following the fall  
17 of the city on December 13, 1937. The capacity of the  
18 hospital was normally one hundred and eighty beds,  
19 and this was kept full to overflowing during this entire  
20 period.

21 Q Doctor, were any children brought in with  
22 wounds during this period?

23 A I mentioned the eight year old boy. There are  
24 two other cases that come to my mind:

25 One was that of a little girl of seven or

WILSON

DIRECT

1 eight, who had a very serious wound of the elbow, with  
2 the elbow joint exposed. Her story to me was that  
3 Japanese soldiers had killed her father and mother in  
4 front of her eyes, and given her this wound.

5 A girl of fifteen was brought into the hospital by  
6 the Reverend John Magee, with the story that she had  
7 been raped. A medical examination confirmed this.  
8 About two months later this girl came again into the  
9 hospital with a secondary rash of syphilis.

10 Q Did these patients report to you from whom  
11 they had received the wounds?

12 A They merely stated that they received the  
13 wounds at the hands -- without exception they reported  
14 that the wounds were received at the hands of Japanese  
15 soldiers.

16 Q Doctor, are these two patients.-- Captain  
17 Liang and Wu-Chang-teh -- in Tokyo?

18 A The man you refer to as Captain Liang -- at the  
19 time I knew him, he was a stretcher-bearer in the Chinese  
20 Army. He is here in Tokyo, and Wu-Chang-teh, the police-  
21 man also mentioned previously, also is in Tokyo.

22 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Morrow, apparently he  
23 has not heard the witness finish his answer.

24 Q Doctor, was there any change in the matter of  
25 the sale of opium in the City of Nanking following the

WILSON

DIRECT

1 occupation of that city by the Japanese in December,  
2 1937?

3 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, patently  
4 that does not tend to prove or disprove any of the is-  
5 sues in this case, and we ask that the witness not be  
6 permitted to answer, and that this line of cross-examina-  
7 tion -- of direct examination -- be abandoned.

8 THE PRESIDENT: It is certainly objectionable  
9 as leading in a very important matter, but what about  
10 this question of relevancy? I will hear you on that.  
11 The question is leading, and leading in a very important  
12 matter, but it is also objected to as being irrelevant.  
13 I would like to hear you on that.

14 (Addressing Mr. Warren) I would like to hear  
15 him, Mr. Warren;

16 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal, it  
17 is the purpose of the testimony to show whether or not  
18 there was an increase in the open sale of opium and  
19 narcotics in the City of Nanking following the occupa-  
20 tion; and if so, something of the extent of that increase.

21 THE PRESIDENT: There is a count in the Indict-  
22 ment covering narcotics, but I forget the exact terms.

23 MR. SUTTON: It is to this charge in the Indict-  
24 ment that this portion of the evidence is directed.

25 THE PRESIDENT: Well, read the charge.

WILSON

DIRECT

1 MR. SUTTON: Will your Honor excuse me for  
2 a moment while I find the proper place in the Indict-  
3 ment?

4 THE PRESIDENT: Well, this is a convenient  
5 time to adjourn. We will recess now until half past  
6 nine tomorrow morning.

7 (Whereupon, at 1600, an adjournment  
8 was taken until Friday, 26 July 1946, at 0930.)

9 - - - -  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25





Corr.

26 Jul 46  
53

21.7.26

26 JULY 1946

I N D E X

Of

WITNESSES

<u>Prosecution's Witnesses</u>	<u>Page</u>
Wilson, Dr. Robert O. (resumed)	2547
Direct by Mr. Sutton	2547
Cross by Mr. S. Okamoto	2551
"    " Mr. Ito	2554
Hsu, Chuan-ying	2556
Direct by Mr. Sutton	2557
Cross by Mr. Kanzaki	2583
"    " Mr. Ito	2589
Shang, Teh Yi	2599
Direct by Mr. Sutton	2599
Wu, Chang Teh	2603
Direct by Mr. Sutton	2603
Chen, Fu Pao	2608
Direct by Colonel Morrow	2608
Cross by Mr. Ito	2612

I N D E X

Of

EXHIBITS

<u>Pros.</u>	<u>Def.</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>For</u>	<u>In</u>
<u>No.</u>	<u>No.</u>		<u>Ident.</u>	<u>Evidence</u>
205		Statement of Hsu, Chuan-ying	2556	
206		"    " Shang, Teh Yi		2599
207		"    " Wu, Chang Teh		2603
208		"    " Chen, Fu Pao		2608

1 Friday, 26 July, 1946

2 - - -

3  
4 INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL  
5 FOR THE FAR EAST  
6 Court House of the Tribunal  
7 War Ministry Building  
8 Tokyo, Japan

9 The Tribunal met, pursuant to adjournment,  
10 at 0930.

11 - - -

12 Appearances:

13 For the Tribunal, same as before.

14 For the Prosecution Section, same as before.

15 For the Defense Section, same as before.

16  
17 - - -

18 (English to Japanese, Japanese to  
19 English, English to Chinese, and Chinese to  
20 English interpretation was made by the  
21 Language Section, IMTFE.)  
22  
23  
24  
25

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
2 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Except OKAWA, who is re-  
4 presented by counsel, all the accused are present.

5 Does counsel desire to mention any matter?  
6 Mr. Warren.

7 MR. WARREN: If the Tribunal please, there  
8 was no particular time yesterday for me to say what  
9 I am going to. When this witness took the stand I  
10 stated that the defense had not been notified. I  
11 find that our section was notified, and in the manner  
12 the prosecution had told the Tribunal, however, that  
13 information did not get to us because we are all  
14 very skimpy on help; it did not get to us and I want  
15 to apologize to the prosecution and to the Tribunal  
16 for having made a remark which was not true.

17 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Sutton.

18 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal,  
19 in answer to the inquiry propounded by the Court  
20 just before adjournment on yesterday, with regard to  
21 the relevancy of evidence on the subject of opium and  
22 narcotics, I desire to call the Court's attention to  
23 the fact that in counts 1, 3, 4, 5, 6, 27 and 38 of  
24 the Indictment there is the charge of waging aggressive  
25 war. In each of these counts reference is specifically

1 made to Appendix "B" -- I beg pardon, to Appendix  
2 "A", Section 4. This section, Section "A", of  
3 Appendix 4, reads as follows: "METHODS OF CORRUPTION  
4 AND COERCION IN CHINA AND OTHER OCCUPIED TERRITORIES:

5 During the whole period covered by this Indictment,  
6 successive Japanese Governments, through their  
7 military and naval commanders and civilian agents in  
8 China and other territories which they had occupied  
9 or designed to occupy, pursued a systematic policy  
10 of weakening the native inhabitants will to resist  
11 by atrocities and cruelties, by force and threats of  
12 force, by bribery and corruption, by intrigue amongst  
13 local politicians and generals, by directly and in-  
14 directly encouraging increased production and im-  
15 portation of opium and other narcotics and by promoting  
16 the sale and consumption of such drugs among such  
17 people."

18 MR. McMANUS: If your Honor pleases, I  
19 think the Court knows and we know what the Indictment  
20 reads, and the appendices thereto. I don't see any  
21 reason to read it into the record. It is there; the  
22 Court knows. Just why couldn't counsel make reference  
23 to it rather than reading it? We all know what it is.

24 THE PRESIDENT: The defense raised the  
25 objection and it is for you to establish it, and

1 you may go further than making mere reference. Per-  
2 sonally I am glad you read that.

3 MR. SUTTON: The position taken by the  
4 defense today is quite inconsistent with the position  
5 which they took on yesterday.

6 THE PRESIDENT: I think you have read  
7 enough. You had better keep those headphones on or  
8 I will have to repeat myself.

9 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal,  
10 I should like to refer to the fact that in the open-  
11 ing address of the chief of counsel this statement  
12 was made. I will read from page 35 of that document  
13 one sentence: "The evidence will also disclose that  
14 opium was used as a military weapon to break the  
15 morale of the people and to destroy their will to  
16 fight, as well as a means of revenue to finance  
17 Japan's armies." That is all we wish to say on  
18 this point.

19 THE PRESIDENT: The objection is overruled.

20 MR. WARREN: Your Honor, may I be heard on  
21 that before I am overruled?

22 THE PRESIDENT: Oh, no, it is obviously  
23 a matter upon which evidence can be received. We  
24 have heard enough, Mr. Warren.

25 MR. WARREN: On another point, then, your

1 Honor, we should like to object to it, on the ground  
2 that his questions are, as you pointed out, entirely  
3 leading.

4 THE PRESIDENT: I doubt whether I was right.  
5 I looked at the record, and unfortunately I do not  
6 hear everything that is said at that lecturn, because  
7 counsel sometimes turn away from the microphone.

8 MR. WARREN: And, in addition, your Honor,  
9 it assumes a fact that was not in evidence. I made  
10 the same type of previous objection.

11 THE PRESIDENT: Surely you can assume the  
12 fact that narcotics are used in Nanking.

13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

WILSON

DIRECT

1 R O B E R T O. W I L S O N, called as a witness  
2 on behalf of the prosecution, resumed the stand  
3 and testified as follows:

4 DIRECT EXAMINATION (Continued)

5 BY MR. SUTTON:

6 MR. SUTTON: "Will the question be read back  
7 to the witness?"

8 ("hereupon, the last question was  
9 read by the President from the Official trans-  
10 cript of Thursday, 25 July 1946, as follows:

11 "Q "Was there any change in the sale of opium  
12 in Nanking following the occupation of the city by  
13 the Japanese in December, 1937?"

14 A Prior to the Japanese occupation, I had  
15 never seen an opium den with a sign on the outside  
16 showing that the sale of opium was going on in that  
17 place. It was a capital offense to be found selling  
18 opium. About one year after the occupation, in the  
19 Spring of 1939, I was bicycling down one of the  
20 main streets of the city. In the space of about one  
21 mile on Shengjao Road, between Kiang Tang Chieh  
22 Methodist Church and Chung Ji-leu, I counted twenty-  
23 on, opium dens openly -- twenty-one places openly  
24 selling opium. These places all had the Chinese  
25 characters "Kwang To" prominently displayed in front



WILSON

DIRECT

1 of the place.

2 Q Doctor, what is the meaning of the Chinese  
3 character "Kwang To"?

4 A That is one of the terms used for opium and  
5 means "official earth."

6 MR. SUTTON: The defense may cross-examine  
7 the witness.

8 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Warren.

9 MR. WARREN: Apparently there is no cross-  
10 examination, your Honor.

11 THE PRESIDENT: No cross-examination?

12 MR. SUTTON: We desire to call as the next  
13 witness Dr. Hsu Chuan-wing.

14 THE PRESIDENT: I understand a Japanese  
15 counsel wants to say something.

16 (Whereupon, the witness left the box).

17 MR. McMANUS: If the President pleases, we  
18 are undetermined at this time, at least, we thought  
19 there would be no cross-examination concerning this  
20 witness. We understand from Dr. KIYOSE that there  
21 might be one Japanese counsel who might like to ask  
22 a few questions.

23 THE PRESIDENT: We will give permission to  
24 cross-examine the witness, who will be recalled for  
25 that purpose. Bring the doctor back. The doctor

1 may have gotten away. I think you had better go on  
2 with the next witness.

3 MR. KEENAN: May it please the Court --

4 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Chief Prosecutor.

5 MR. KEENAN: Yesterday the Court, as I  
6 understand it, made the ruling that when a witness  
7 spoke in the English language the practice of per-  
8 mitting the offering of the affidavit would not be  
9 countenanced.

10 THE PRESIDENT: Put it this way: when he  
11 is a European, born in America, and educated there up  
12 to university standard.

13 MR. KEENAN: With great respect, I want to  
14 suggest two matters to the Court. First of all, the  
15 Charter itself, in setting forth the admissibility of  
16 affidavits, specifically makes no distinction as to  
17 the language, either in the original affidavit as  
18 filed, or the language of any witness who would tes-  
19 tify as to germane subjects. And secondly, in the  
20 best estimate of counsel, such a ruling would prolong  
21 the length of this trial a matter perhaps between  
22 four and five weeks. With great respect, we want to  
23 inform the Court of our views and our estimates of  
24 time upon that subject, so that if there is a profound  
25 reason for the distinction, we do not care to urge the

1 matter any further, but if it is compatible with  
2 orderly trial, we greatly request the Court's re-  
3 consideration of that ruling to determine if we are  
4 within the provisions of the Charter in offering the  
5 evidence in affidavit form, as already I understand  
6 has been the practice during the proceedings in this  
7 Court. We think that in fairness to the Court, we  
8 ought to apprise the Court of our intention in future,  
9 from the time element, so that that might be given  
10 whatever consideration it deserves in the minds of  
11 this Tribunal.

12 THE PRESIDENT: Obviously, the Charter  
13 does not deprive us of the discretion which we  
14 exercised yesterday, that is, to insist upon the  
15 examination in chief being conducted orally and not  
16 by affidavit. No time was lost in following the  
17 normal course. The oral examination was conducted  
18 as speedily as the affidavit could have been read.  
19 In receiving affidavits we have exercised more  
20 liberality than has been displayed at Nuernberg.  
21 The Court will continue to exercise its judgment  
22 in each case.

23 (Whereupon, Dr. Robert O. Wilson  
24 returned to the witness box).  
25

WILSON

CROSS

W  
h  
a  
l  
e  
n  
&  
D  
u  
d  
a

1 MR. S. OKAMOTO: I am OKAMOTO, Shoichi,  
2 counsel for the defendant MUTO, Akira.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Doctor, you are still on your  
4 former oath.

5 MR. S. OKAMOTO: I also believe so. In line  
6 with the Court's views, I will be quite pleased if  
7 the oath should be re-administered -- should be admin-  
8 istered again.

9 THE PRESIDENT: There is no need for that.  
10 Please put your questions or retire from the lectern.

## 11 CROSS-EXAMINATION

12 BY MR. S. OKAMOTO:

13 Q You have testified that the doctors and  
14 nurses at your hospital ran away before the fall of  
15 Nanking. Does that not also apply to the inhabitants  
16 of the adjacent districts?

17 A The population of Nanking before the war was  
18 slightly over one million. At the time that the  
19 Japanese took the city a majority of the inhabitants  
20 had left and the population was less than half a mil-  
21 lion.

22 Q I did not hear the time. When was that that  
23 it decreased to that number?

24 A During the month of November and the first  
25 two weeks in December.

WILSON

CROSS

1 Q Then you are aware that before the fall of  
2 Nanking a great number of the people had already fled?

3 A That is true.

4 Q Is it correct that you had 170 beds in your  
5 hospital?

6 A The number is usually given as 180.

7 Q And you say that these beds immediately be-  
8 came full -- became full immediately after the fall  
9 of Nanking. When was this?

10 A Within the first week after the fall of Nan-  
11 king. Many patients were turned away because we had  
12 not enough beds.

13 Q About how many patients did you turn away?  
14 Do you remember the general figures, the approximate  
15 figures?

16 A I would have no way of telling that, princi-  
17 pally because my work was in the operating room and I  
18 was there busy most of the time day and night for a  
19 few weeks after the occupation. The others handled  
20 the out patients and had to turn away patients when  
21 there were no beds.

22 Q You have stated that many of your patients,  
23 these patients that you treated, had wounds. But as  
24 the translation was incorrect, I would like to point  
25 out one example. For instance, you say that a woman

WILSON

CROSS

1 of about forty had a wound in her neck and that the  
2 muscles were cut and were hanging loose. But what was  
3 this caused by?

4 A A Japanese sword.

5 Q Were not many of the other wounds due to frag-  
6 ments of shells?

7 A Not at that time. During the fall in October  
8 and September when we were under many air raids we  
9 received numerous wound fragments. But at the time  
10 that we are referring to, after the fall of Nanking,  
11 there was no fighting.

12 MR. S. OKAMOTO: That is all I have to say.

13 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: May I?

14 THE PRESIDENT: The Japanese counsel who has  
15 just cross-examined was under misapprehension, but you  
16 are not. We will not allow you to cross-examine.

17 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: If it please your Honor,  
18 I sit in a far corner of the Tribunal and the head  
19 table did not consult me as to whether I wished to  
20 cross-examine.

21 THE PRESIDENT: You have a voice and you  
22 could have used it from there.

23 CAPTAIN KLEIMAN: I just had two questions in  
24 mind, very short.

25 THE PRESIDENT: Well, he was not recalled

WILSON

CROSS

1 for cross-examination by you, Captain Kleiman, but  
2 for cross-examination by Japanese counsel.

3 MR. ITO: I am ITO, Kiyoshi, counsel for the  
4 defendant MATSUI, Iwane.

5 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

6 BY MR. ITO:

7 Q As I was unable to get your testimony very  
8 well yesterday, being unable to understand English, I  
9 would like to just ask you this question.

10 You say that a Chinese woman was raped by a  
11 Japanese soldier and that two months later she showed  
12 signs of being in the second stage of syphilis. Was  
13 that correct?

14 A That is true.

15 Q Thank you. According to my observations --  
16 of course I am an amateur so they may not be correct --  
17 manifestations of the second stage of syphilis are not  
18 usually until after over three months have passed  
19 after infection. But is that correct?

20 A That is the third stage.

21 Q Is that a difference in theory? The book  
22 that I have here says three months.

23 A I am sure I don't know what that book is.  
24 My observations are that any time from six weeks to  
25 three months the secondary rash may appear.

WILSON

CROSS

1 Q Well, anyway, according to this book I can-  
2 not but conclude that since it takes over three months  
3 for the second stage to appear, that this woman could  
4 not have been infected by a Japanese soldier two  
5 months previously.

6 A You are entitled to your opinion and I am  
7 entitled to mine.

8 THE PRESIDENT: You must take the witness'  
9 answer. You can call evidence later to contradict  
10 him if you wish.

11 MR. ITO: I shall do so later.

12 THE PRESIDENT: Yes. That will do, doctor.

13 (Whereupon, the witness was excused.)

14 MR. SUTTON: The prosecution desires to call  
15 as its next witness Hsu Chuan-Ying, of the Republic  
16 of China.

17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



HSU

DIRECT

1 H S U C H U A N - Y I N G, called as a witness  
2 on behalf of the prosecution, being first duly  
3 sworn, testified as follows:

## 4 DIRECT EXAMINATION

5 MR. SUTTON: If it please the Court, we de-  
6 sire to present International Prosecution Section  
7 document 1734.

8 THE PRESIDENT: Exhibit number, Mr. Sutton,  
9 please.

10 DEPUTY CLERK OF THE COURT: Document No. 1734  
11 will be given exhibit No. 205.

12 . . . (Whereupon, the document above  
13 referred to was marked prosecution's exhibit  
14 No. 205 for identification.)

15 MR. McMANUS: If your Honor pleases, I would  
16 like now to have made the same objection that Mr. Levin  
17 made yesterday. This man is a graduate of a university,  
18 he can speak the English language, and he is evidently  
19 an intelligent man, and definitely we object to any  
20 affidavit of his being introduced and request the  
21 Court should take direct testimony from him.

22 THE PRESIDENT: I would like to know a little  
23 more about him, Mr. McManus. We have not heard much  
24 from him yet.

25 You had better open your examination,

HSU

DIRECT

1 Mr. Sutton, so that we might have something on which  
2 to form a judgment.

3 MR. McMANUS: Is your Honor accepting the  
4 document?

5 THE PRESIDENT: Well, not yet. I have not  
6 said "accepted" yet.

7 MR. McMANUS: Well, the Clerk announced it  
8 was marked in evidence, if the Court pleases.

9 THE PRESIDENT: No; for identification.

10 BY MR. SUTTON:

11 Q Where were you born, and when?

12 A I was born in Nanking sixty-two years ago.

13 Q Where have you lived throughout your life?

14 A I lived in Nanking since 1928.

15 THE PRESIDENT: Is he a university graduate?

16 MR. SUTTON: Yes, sir.

17 THE WITNESS: I have a B.A. from the Univer-  
18 sity of Nanking, and also a Ph.D. from the University  
19 of Illinois.

20 THE PRESIDENT: I think you had better examine  
21 him orally, and if you strike any real difficulty we  
22 may be able at that stage to accept his affidavit.

23 Q Dr. Hsu, where were you educated?

24 THE PRESIDENT: Well, he told you.

25 A I was educated in Nanking and in the University

HSU

DIRECT

1 of Illinois when I was only thirteen years old.

2 Q Following your education, what occupation  
3 did you pursue?

4 A After I graduated from the University of Nan-  
5 king I taught for about ten years, and after that I  
6 went to the States to study further.

7 Q What occupation did you follow when you  
8 returned to China?

9 A I joined the railway service. At first I  
10 was in the Tientsin-Pukow Railway, and later on I  
11 joined the Ministry of Railways in different positions.  
12 Later on I was always on the line, either on the line  
13 or in the Ministry.

14 Q During what period have you lived in the city  
15 of Nanking?

16 A Well, when the government removed to Nanking  
17 in 1928, I was in the Ministry of Railways. So I made  
18 my home in Nanking and have houses over there.

19 Q Have you continued to make your residence in  
20 the city of Nanking since 1928?

21 A Yes, I do.

22 Q When was Nanking occupied by the Japanese Army?

23 A December 13, 1937.

24 Q Was there any resistance on the part of  
25 Chinese forces of any nature in the city of Nanking

HSU

DIRECT

1 after December 13, 1937?

2 A On the day of 13 December 1937, there was no  
3 resistance at all in the city. Before that date there  
4 was some resistance outside of the city, and on that  
5 day all the soldiers left Nanking.

6 Q Was there any resistance on the part of Chi-  
7 nese soldiers or any organized force after December 13,  
8 1937?

9 A No, absolutely none.

10 Q Were you connected with the International  
11 Committee for the Nanking Safety Zone?

12 A I was connected with the International Com-  
13 mittee where, as a Housing -- as the chief of the Hous-  
14 ing Commission.

15 Q How many camps did you have under your juris-  
16 diction?

17 A My duty was to look after the accommodations  
18 for those who have houses and also those who have not  
19 houses in the safety zone. Now, there were people who  
20 have relatives or friends in the safety zone, they have  
21 houses, they go there. They are there themselves and  
22 they took their necessary things with them. For those  
23 who do not have friends or relatives now we find -- it  
24 is my duty to find houses for them and put them  
25 together. So this number of people amounts to quite a

HSU

DIRECT

1 large number. Finally we have twenty-five camps dif-  
 2 ferent places for them. These twenty-five camps are  
 3 under my supervision, and these houses I assigned to  
 4 them, some are public buildings, some are private  
 5 houses.

6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

HSU

DIRECT

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1 Q How many citizens of China were in the safe-  
2 ty zone?

3 A Generally speaking -- of course, we have no  
4 official figures; but, generally speaking, there are  
5 over two hundred thousand -- comes pretty nearly to  
6 three hundred thousand people in the safety zone.

7 Q Were you, in December, 1937, connected with  
8 the Red Swastika Society, and, if so, in what capac-  
9 ity?

10 A Swastika Society was invited by the Inter-  
11 national Committee to cooperate with them because  
12 they do not have English speaking persons with them,  
13 so I was invited by them to represent them in order  
14 to cooperate with the International Committee, and I  
15 was at that time the Vice-Chairman of the Swastika  
16 Society.

17 Q From which direction did the Japanese sold-  
18 iers enter the city of Nanking?

19 A From the south side of the city.

20 Q What was the action of the Japanese soldiers  
21 toward the civilians as they came into the city?

22 MR. McMANUS: If your Honor pleases, I am  
23 compelled to object at this time. I don't think that  
24 this question should be permitted, and the questions  
25 have been leading, and the answers have been not

HSU

DIRECT

1 responsive. I ask your Honor to entertain my object-  
2 ion at this time.

3 THE PRESIDENT: There has been no substan-  
4 tial infringement of the rule against leading, assum-  
5 ing we have to apply it strictly here. I see nothing  
6 wrong in the method of examination in chief.

7 Please continue, Mr. Sutton.

8 MR. SUTTON: Will the reporter read the  
9 question back to the witness.

10 (Whereupon, the last question was  
11 read by the official court reporter as  
12 follows:)

13 "Q What was the action of the Japanese  
14 soldiers toward the civilians as they came into the  
15 city?"

16 A The Japanese soldiers, when they entered  
17 the city -- they were very very rough, and they were  
18 very barbarious: They shoot at everyone in sight.  
19 Anybody who runs away, or on the street, or hanging  
20 around somewhere, or peeking through the door, they  
21 shoot them -- instant death.

22 Q Did you witness murders committed by Japan-  
23 ese soldiers, and, if so, will you give specific  
24 instances?

25 MR. BROOKS: I object to that question. It

HSU

DIRECT

1 is assuming that there was a murder. He is asking  
2 about soldiers. It is up to the Court to determine  
3 whether this was murder or not.

4 THE PRESIDENT: Objection is overruled.

5 Q (Continuing) The witness will answer.

6 A On the third day I had the chance of the  
7 permission of the Japanese military officers to go  
8 around the city -- all the cities. I had one Japan-  
9 ese going along with me on the car. The purpose of  
10 that is to estimate the number of people lying dead  
11 on the street and in all the houses. I saw the dead  
12 bodies lying everywhere, and some of the bodies are  
13 very badly mutilated. Some of dead bodies are lying  
14 there as they were, shot or killed, some kneeling,  
15 some bending, some on their sides, and some just with  
16 their legs and arms wide open. It shows that these  
17 been done by the Japanese, and I saw several Japanese  
18 were doing that at that very moment.

19 One main street I even started try to count  
20 the number of corpses lying on both sides of the  
21 street, and I started to counting more than five  
22 hundred myself. I say it was no use counting them;  
23 I can never do that.

24 I was at that time on the same car and  
25 another Chinese with me. He was educated in Japan,



HSU

DIRECT

1 and he speaks Japanese. And he -- we together went  
2 to his home, and he found that his brother was also  
3 shot in that house and on the step -- on the door-  
4 step, not take him away yet.

5 The same condition was found in the south  
6 city, in the northern part of the city, on the east  
7 and on the west, and many many people killed, still  
8 lying there, and all -- no Japanese -- no Japanese  
9 soldiers acted any -- showed any courtesy to any  
10 people. I was fortunate because I had on the car a  
11 Japanese -- a Chinese who can speak Japanese, and  
12 many times I was interrupted, and they try to drag  
13 me out of the car, and I -- the Japanese on the car  
14 help me out because we had permits from them.

15 All these corpses, not a single one I find  
16 in uniform -- not a single soldier; they are all  
17 civilians, both old and young, and women and child-  
18 ren, too. All the soldiers -- we do not see any  
19 Chinese soldier around in the whole city.

20 Q Did the Japanese soldiers enter the safety  
21 zone and remove Chinese citizens therefrom?

22 A The Safety Zone Committee -- the Inter-  
23 national Committee has made a rule, no armed soldier  
24 or any soldiers -- military people -- are supposed to  
25 be in the military -- in the zone, and they would

HSU

DIRECT

1 never allow -- admit anybody in uniform.

2 On the second day -- that is, December 14 --  
3 in the morning, a high military Japanese soldier  
4 came into our -- the headquarter of our International  
5 Committee office -- headquarter, and I was the one  
6 happened to be there early in the morning, about  
7 eight o'clock. There his purpose is want to get per-  
8 mission or talk over -- want to make a search of the  
9 safety zone. He accused us that there were -- are  
10 Chinese soldiers hidden in the safety zone. We all  
11 said there were no soldiers -- no armed soldiers in  
12 the Chinese -- in the safety zone, and Mr. Raabe said  
13 so, Mr. Fitch, our Director, said so, and we all said  
14 so, but the Japanese insist on searching, and they  
15 never get our consent of searching the safety zone.

16 On the following days, with these Japanese  
17 military officers -- they came with their own will,  
18 and go into the camps and also the houses and try to  
19 get -- to drag people out from our camp and from the  
20 houses and accusing them as they are soldiers.

21 THE PRESIDENT: We will recess now for  
22 fifteen minutes.

23 (Whereupon, at 1045, a recess was  
24 taken until 1100, after which the proceed-  
25 ings were resumed as follows:)

HSH

DIRECT

W  
O  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t

1 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
2 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

3 THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Sutton.

4 BY MR. SUTTON (Continued)

5 Q You may proceed with your answer.

6 A The Japanese soldiers came into the safety  
7 zone and searched and took away large number of Chinese  
8 civilians in the different camps, in different places.

9 One day I was with the other member, distribut-  
10 ing Chinese bread and cakes to those refugees in one of  
11 the buildings. When we nearly finish, all of a sudden  
12 Japanese soldiers came. Two of them guarded the gate.  
13 Several soldiers went in and used ropes and tied the  
14 refugee people -- the civilians -- all civilians --  
15 hand in hand -- some by some several tens, fifteens,  
16 and they took them away. I was standing there and  
17 astonished what was the meaning of it. In that com-  
18 pound, in the building, there are about fifteen hundred  
19 civilians -- refugees -- and they are took away in such  
20 a manner. They even tried to take some of our Swastika  
21 members, but after explanation they seemed to let us go.  
22 I, at that time, asked for somebody to report imme-  
23 diately to the International Committee -- Mr. Raabe.  
24 Mr. Raabe and Mr. Fitch came at my request, but these  
25 people -- these civilians -- were already taken away

1 by the Japanese soldiers. When, after a little talk,  
2 Mr. Raabe, Mr. Fitch, and myself, and another Chinese,  
3 who speaks Japanese -- we all went immediately to the  
4 Special Service Headquarter --- the Japanese Special  
5 Service Headquarter. Mr. Raabe made the protest. He  
6 asked them first why they entered into the safety zone  
7 and took the civilians -- the refugees -- away; and  
8 second, what do they took them for, where they are now,  
9 and also demanded immediate release. The answer we  
10 get is they do not know -- the Japanese head office,  
11 special -- head of the Special Service Organization  
12 said they don't know. So we waited there and waited  
13 there an hour for them -- to enable them to find out  
14 where these people go and who took them. We could not  
15 find out anything from them. They do not give us any  
16 satisfactory answer, and they even promised to give a  
17 definite answer before the morning, but they didn't.

18 On the following day, about seven and eight  
19 o'clock, we hear machine gun. Now, around that place --  
20 around the headquarters of the International Committee  
21 and also the Swastika Society, we immediately sent  
22 people spying around, and we know those -- we then,  
23 at that time we saw those people were machine-gunned  
24 and their corpses were pushed into the pond. Later on,  
25 we got those corpses up, and also we recognized a few of

HQU

DIRECT

1 them.

2 After this, we had trouble in every camp. Every  
3 day the Japanese soldiers came into the camp and looked  
4 for Chinese soldiers in the different camps, sometimes  
5 a few tenants, sometimes several tenants, and sometimes  
6 hundreds of these refugees -- civilians -- took away  
7 by these Japanese soldiers; and later on we were sure  
8 that they were all shot. Their excuse is that these  
9 men are soldiers, and also sometimes they simply, by  
10 listening to some others say so and so, are soldiers,  
11 but in reality they are all civilians, and not a single  
12 one even in uniform or armed.

13 Q Who was Mr. Raabe, and what, if any, was his  
14 connection with the International Committee for the  
15 Nanking safety zone?

16 A Mr. Raabe is a German, and he is the head of  
17 the Seamen's Company at Nanking, and he is the Chairman  
18 of the International Committee.

19 Q How were the women in the City of Nanking  
20 treated by the Japanese soldiers, following their entry  
21 into that city?

22 A The action of the Japanese soldiers toward  
23 women are even worse, and we can never dream of in this  
24 civilized world. The Japanese soldiers -- they are so  
25 fond of raping -- so fond of women -- that one cannot

MSU

DIRECT

1 believe.

2 THE PRESIDENT: Witness, you must be satis-  
3 fied simply to tell us how the Japanese treated the  
4 women in Nanking, if you know.

5 A I know many cases, because in the safety zone  
6 in the camps, any Japanese soldier would go in and  
7 would try to get a woman or to rape them, I would know  
8 about it; they would come to me. So many times I go  
9 with a Mr. Sperling, or another foreigner go with me,  
10 and get another soldier.

11 In one of the camp, the Japanese soldier came  
12 with three trucks in one day, and wanted to take all  
13 the girls from that camp, and took them to a place  
14 where they can rape them. I went -- tried to stop  
15 them, but no effect. Now these girls, these women,  
16 ranges from thirteen years old up to forty years old.  
17 I see with my very eyes the Japanese soldier raping a  
18 woman in a bath room, and his clothes outside, and  
19 then afterwards we discovered the bathroom door, and  
20 found a woman naked and also weeping and downcast.  
21 Once I went with Mr. FUKUDA. At that time he was  
22 vice-consul of the Japanese Embassy, now the secretary  
23 of the new cabinet in Tokyo. Now we went to the camp  
24 to try to get -- to catch two Japanese who were re-  
25 ported to be living there. At the time we reached

HSU

DIRECT

1 there we saw one Japanese still sitting there, with  
2 a woman on the corner and weeping. I told FUKUDA,  
3 "This is the man who did the raping," and that man  
4 was sitting there with his head low there, and FUKUDA  
5 began to ask, "Why did you do that -- what business  
6 have you here?"

7 MR. McMANUS: At this time, if the Tribunal  
8 please, I would like to object, and I am objecting on  
9 the ground of relevancy. In what way has any of these  
10 things that this man has testified about -- in what  
11 way is it connected up with any of the defendants?  
12 I am making the objection on the ground of relevancy,  
13 concerning the connection with these defendants.

14 THE PRESIDENT: There is no doubt at all  
15 about the relevancy of this. It shows the type of  
16 war conducted by the Japanese, if it be the truth.  
17 It is clearly relevant. The objection is overruled.

18 (Mr. McManus again approaches lectern.)

19 I have dealt with your grounds. You cannot  
20 add to them now.

21 A (Continued) Mr. FUKUDA rebuked him, it  
22 evidently seems the Japanese soldier there, and also  
23 then tried to push the man away, and that Japanese  
24 soldier left and afterwards, then, Mr. FUKUDA had a  
25 little smile on his face, and then, at that time,

HSU

DIRECT

1 this is the first time I thought -- I have the plan --  
2 I asked him to write in Chinese. I said, "Your  
3 pushing him away is of no use; he may come back again."  
4 I said, "Put up a notice prohibiting these soldiers  
5 to come in these camps for women." He did write that  
6 notice, and we pasted it on that camp, but such notice  
7 is of no use. I can repeat instances of this same  
8 thing again. Later on we have a puppet government.  
9 Now, the head of that Chief of Police I happened to  
10 know very well, because he was in the safety zone.  
11 So every time I reported something he would do it.  
12 Once we caught a Japanese raping, and he was naked.  
13 He was sleeping, because then we tied him and we got  
14 him to that police office. All we hear about their  
15 soldiers raping is that where this soldier had been  
16 sent to the Japanese headquarter.

17 Q Were any of the victims killed after they  
18 had been attacked by the Japanese soldiers?

19 THE PRESIDENT: You mean any of the women that  
20 had been raped; had any of the women been killed after  
21 being raped, is that what you mean?

22 MR. SUTTON: Yes, sir.  
23  
24  
25



HSU

DIRECT

G  
O  
L  
D  
B  
E  
R  
G  
&  
B  
A  
R  
T  
O  
N

1 A Sin Kai Road, No. 7, on the South Gate, in-  
 2 side of the South Gate there was a family. I went  
 3 there myself with Mr. Magee. In that house there  
 4 were eleven killed -- three raped and two -- there  
 5 were two of the three, one is fourteen and one is  
 6 seventeen. After raping, they put foreign stuff into  
 7 the vagina and the grandmother showed me the stuff.  
 8 The young girl was raped on the table; and while I  
 9 was there the blood spilled on the table not all dry  
 10 yet. And we also see the corpses because they were  
 11 taken away, not far away, only a few yards from that  
 12 house, all the corpses there. Of those corpses Mr.  
 13 Magee and I took pictures of them because they were  
 14 naked and shows the crimes there.

15 I know another case where because of the  
 16 boatman, he happens to be a member of the Swastika  
 17 Society, he told me this: where he saw that too on  
 18 his boat, it happened on his boat.

19 THE PRESIDENT: The Court will have to con-  
 20 sider seriously how far it will have to accept this  
 21 second-hand hearsay.

22 MR. SUTTON: Shall he proceed?

23 THE PRESIDENT: Go ahead.

24 A (Continuing): There was a family of  
 25 respectable people tried to cross the river on that

HSU

DIRECT

1 boat. Now, in the middle of the water of the river,  
2 two Japanese soldiers came. They found -- they want  
3 to inspect that boat; where, on seeing the young women  
4 there, the young women and girls there, two of them,  
5 so they began, started raping right in the eyes  
6 of their parents and one of their husbands.

7 After raping, the Japanese asked the old man  
8 in that family: "Isn't that good?" Where his son,  
9 the husband of one of the young women, he got so  
10 angry so he began to beat the Japanese soldier.  
11 The old man cannot stand such a thing so he knows  
12 that they were all in trouble so he immediately  
13 jumped into the river. Then his wife, old wife,  
14 the mother of that young man, she began to weep and  
15 came out and also followed her husband. I forgot to  
16 say that when the Japanese asked the older man whether  
17 it is good or not, he wanted the old man to rape  
18 that young girl so all the girls -- now I saw this --  
19 they all jumped into the river. So the whole family  
20 jumped into the river and all drowned. This is not  
21 second-hand story. This is a real, real and genuine,  
22 and we have, we know that, the boatman has been with  
23 us for a long time.

24 Q Did the Red Swastika Society engage in the  
25 burial of the civilian dead in the City of Nanking?

HSU

DIRECT

1           A    The Red Swastika has made it as a phil-  
2 anthropic work to bury the dead who are really not  
3 able to be buried. Now, at this time, there are  
4 so many dead bodies on the street, nobody to look  
5 after. The Japanese also came, Japanese soldiers,  
6 Japanese military men came to ask our help, say:  
7 "Well, you have been doing this kind of work, why  
8 can't you do it for us?" After we get their per-  
9 mission to do this, they gave us a permit and  
10 passports and some facilities to travel in the city,  
11 so we started burying them.

12                We have on our regular staff around two  
13 hundred laborers doing this kind of work. We buried  
14 over forty-three thousand where the number is really  
15 too small. The reason is we are not allowed to give  
16 a true number of the people we buried. Where, at  
17 first, we do not dare to give a number, to keep any  
18 records, and later on we just kept private records.  
19 This number represents only what we have buried.  
20 These are all civilians and not soldiers. We have  
21 nothing to do with the soldiers.

22           Q    Were there other organizations engaged in  
23 the burial of civilian dead in Nanking?

24           A    Yes, there are other organizations were  
25 chiefly philanthropic organizations. Swastika is

HSU

DIRECT

1 only one of them.

2 Q Where were these bodies found that were  
3 buried by the Red Swastika Society?

4 A These dead bodies are found either by our-  
5 selves or reported by the people in the surrounding  
6 places or some -- many times the Japanese came  
7 around, Japanese officers, soldiers would come  
8 around; where there were too many dead bodies around  
9 a certain place, they would report to us. The reason  
10 is they are very afraid of epidemics so they like to  
11 keep these dead boies away, especially in February  
12 and January and March. These dead boies are first  
13 get out of their places where, if they are in ponds,  
14 get them out of the water; if, in buildings also,  
15 they will be get out. Now when they are get out,  
16 we find they are, most of them, nearly all of them  
17 are tied, tied hand in hand. Now, sometimes they  
18 use rope, sometimes they use wire. It is our sacred  
19 practice to have a dead body all unloosed if it is  
20 tied. We want to unloose everything, and bury them  
21 one by one. But with these wires, now it is almost  
22 impossible to do that. In many cases these bodies  
23 already decayed so we would not be able to bury them  
24 one by one. All we can do is simply to bury them  
25 in groups.

HSU

DIRECT

1 THE PRESIDENT: You need not go into all  
2 those details. The method of disposal of the bodies  
3 is hardly helpful.

4 A (Continuing) In other case we have found  
5 them all burned, the corpses.

6 Q You refer to the work of this society in  
7 burying the dead in Nanking in January, February  
8 and March. What year was that?

9 A 1937 to 1938.

10 Q What was the action of the Japanese soldiers  
11 following their entry into the City of Nanking with  
12 regard to the personal property of the citizens of  
13 Nanking?

14 A Japanese soldiers do not respect any property  
15 rights or any personal possessions. They enter every  
16 house and take away everything they like. They burn  
17 the houses and they damage the houses. They destroy  
18 the houses.

19 MR. MCMANUS: Concerning this latter testi-  
20 mony, Mr. President, may I ask whether the witness is  
21 testifying from his own knowledge or whether he is  
22 just drawing these conclusions and offering them here  
23 as evidence and if so, I request the Court to instruct  
24 him to please confine himself to the facts and what  
25 he knows.

HSU

DIRECT

1 THE PRESIDENT: I think he is speaking in  
2 the historical present. Most of his evidence has  
3 been. The subject matter lends itself to that. I  
4 think he is telling us the facts as he understands  
5 them, but he is using the present tense in that way.

6 THE WITNESS: My own house has been entered  
7 many times and a piano and a disabled motor car been  
8 taken away --in addition to all the valuables and  
9 the useful stuff that have been taken away.

10 Q Did you see any buildings destroyed by the  
11 Japanese soldiers following their occupation of  
12 the city?

13 A Japanese soldiers started burning the Russian  
14 Legation Embassy where I saw they poured kerosene  
15 oil on that and started the fire. That was on January  
16 1, 1938, at twelve o'clock. Other institutions like  
17 Y. M. C. A., educational buildings and prominent  
18 citizens' residences have all been burned.

19 Q Were these buildings burned after the oc-  
20 cupation of the city by the Japanese?

21 A Yes, this all wanton destruction all done  
22 after the Japanese been in the city many days.

23 Q What did the Japanese soldiers require the  
24 civilians to do as they met the Japanese soldiers on  
25 the street?

HSU

DIRECT

1           A    The Japanese soldiers, especially the guards,  
2 they demand bow down to the Japanese very courteously  
3 at every place where they are stationed. This is  
4 required of everyone. I, myself, am included. I  
5 went, whenever I met a Japanese guard at any place,  
6 either at a gate, at a city gate or at certain quarter,  
7 and I have to bow. 1940, my nephew, for the first  
8 time he came to see me. As he get down from the train  
9 he had his hat on his head and forget, does not know  
10 the necessity of bowing to the guard. The Japanese  
11 guard hit him on the face. He does not know. He  
12 still walks on but he is driving back and give him  
13 another harder kick. Because of this hit, his hat  
14 was fell off on the ground. He unload himself down  
15 and pick that hat again and tried to put it on his  
16 head again. The passerby, the man behind him said:  
17 "Well, you have to take off your hat and bow him.  
18 Otherwise you get always in trouble."

19           THE PRESIDENT: Perhaps you should omit this  
20 face-slapping evidence.

21           Q    How long did the conduct of the Japanese  
22 soldiers toward the civilians in Nanking, in the  
23 manner which you have described, continue following  
24 the fall of that city?

25           A    I did not get your question.

HSU

DIRECT

1 MR. SUTTON: Will the reporter read the  
2 question back to the witness?

3 (Whereupon, the official court reporter  
4 read the last question.)

5 A This same thing continued to the end of the  
6 war.

7 Q Do you know of the conduct of the Japanese  
8 soldiers toward other cities in the vicinity of  
9 Nanking? I beg your pardon. Do you know of the  
10 conduct of Japanese soldiers towards civilians in  
11 other cities in the vicinity of Nanking?

12 A This same type of conduct exists in all  
13 the cities I visited. That is to say, about two  
14 hundred li as far as Nanking and Anhueh cities,  
15 all the same cities occupied.

16 I should like to correct that "li" for miles  
17 because "li" and "mile" in Chinese is the same.

18 THE PRESIDENT: We will adjourn now until  
19 half-past-one.

20 (Whereupon, at 1200, a recess was taken.)  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25



HSU

DIRECT

## AFTERNOON SESSION

1  
2 The Tribunal met, pursuant to recess, at  
3 1330.

4 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The International  
5 Military Tribunal for the Far East is now resumed.

6  
7 H S U C H U A N - Y I N G, called as a witness on  
8 behalf of the prosecution, resumed the stand  
9 and testified as follows:

## DIRECT EXAMINATION (Continued)

10  
11 BY MR. SUTTON:

12 Q What cities did you visit?

13 A I visited two cities, Kuehchou in 1939 and  
14 I visited also Nanking in 1942. I was also in my  
15 native city, Kweichi, 1942.

16 Q Are these the cities referred to in the  
17 answer to the last question asked you at the morning  
18 session?

19 A The same type of conducting the war and also  
20 the same kind of attitude of the Japanese soldiers  
21 toward the civilians and women all the same, and in  
22 smaller cities like Kweichi, my native city, they are  
23 worse.

24 Q Were restrictions placed by the Japanese  
25 soldiers upon Chinese civilians in the conduct of

A  
b  
r  
a  
m  
&  
M  
o  
r  
s  
e

HSU

DIRECT

1 private business?

2 A I didn't quite get your question.

3 Q Will the reporter kindly read the question  
4 back to the witness?

5 (Whereupon, the question was read  
6 by the official court reporter as above  
7 recorded.)

8 Q The question is: were restrictions placed  
9 by the Japanese soldiers upon Chinese civilians in the  
10 conduct of private business?

11 A The restrictions on Chinese civilians in  
12 conducting business were severe. I, myself, were  
13 trying to bring out to Nanking the charcoal of about  
14 eight hundred pounds of charcoal to Nanking by Chinese  
15 boat. Now, my -- the secret service men, the Chinese  
16 secret service men on the Japanese side, they are good  
17 enough to get a permit for me because I offer a partner-  
18 ship with them.

19 THE PRESIDENT: Having regard to the number  
20 and the magnitude of the issues here, is it worth  
21 while to spend any time on that sort of thing,  
22 restrictions on business?

23 MR. SUTTON: The evidence is offered in  
24 connection with counts 1 to 6 and 18 and 19 of the  
25 Indictment which refer for particulars to Appendix A.

HSU

DIRECT

1 The charge is included in section 3, Appendix A. It  
2 is simply one small portion of evidence in connection  
3 with that charge.

4 THE PRESIDENT: Well, it may lead to some-  
5 thing bigger but it is a trifle. We trust you to put  
6 before us only things that matter.

7 Q Was opium openly sold in Nanking prior to  
8 the Japanese occupation of that city in December, 1937?

9 A Before December, 1937, opium was not allowed  
10 to sell in public, when we have already succeeded more  
11 or less at that time, 1937 -- before that time, 1937,  
12 opium was wiped out.

13 Q Was opium openly sold in Nanking after the  
14 city was occupied by the Japanese troops?

15 THE PRESIDENT: You have forgotten that he  
16 said it was. He said there were twenty shops on the  
17 main street.

18 MR. SUTTON: If you Honor please, that was  
19 Doctor Wilson's testimony.

20 THE PRESIDENT: I am sorry. Yes, you are  
21 right, quite right.

22 A Opium was publicly open on sale after  
23 December, 1937, and there are many opium dens near the  
24 city, near the street, where I live and once in a  
25 while I just stroll into those open opium dens

HSU

DIRECT

1 and found there are no police, even no police were  
2 interfere with them. In addition heroin is very easy  
3 to get and I have seen people smoking heroin and much  
4 more openly than ever before, and also there are  
5 cigarettes with heroin in it and I have picked out one  
6 or two brands of cigarettes myself. Heroin cigarettes  
7 has been offered to me many times and heroin cigarettes  
8 has been offered to the Chinese laborers, so-called  
9 "coolies." These laborers, sometimes their age is  
10 just over ten and others around thirty. Now, the  
11 general method used to get around good with these  
12 laborer coolies is to offer them these cigarettes  
13 after their work. Cigarettes are sold by the Japanese,  
14 make special effort to sell more cigarettes. They  
15 are not easy to get other necessities of life, but  
16 cigarettes is always ready. But in Nanking, Wu-Hu,  
17 An-Ching, An-Hueh they open special shops, give  
18 special facilities to sell these cigarettes.

19 MR. SUTTON: The defense may cross-examine  
20 the witness.

21 MR. KANZAKI: I am KANZAKI, Masayushi  
22 counsel for the defendant HATA.

23 CROSS-EXAMINATION.

24 BY MR. KANZAKI:

25 Q In answer to a question put by the prosecution

1 you answered that the atrocities committed by Japanese  
 2 soldiers continued until the end -- until the con-  
 3 clusion of the war. Is that correct?

4 A That is not quite correct. If I remember  
 5 correctly, my statement is this: where it was the  
 6 worst about the first few months, especially three  
 7 months, and later on it gradually diminished more or  
 8 less. It diminished more or less not because of the  
 9 Japanese soldiers, because of the efforts made on  
 10 both sides to get rid of these worst atrocities. You  
 11 see, there is whore houses and geisha houses have  
 12 been opened and there are women and girls like pros-  
 13 titutes. Now they are given a chance for the Japanese  
 14 to go there.

15 Q Then may I understand that atrocities of  
 16 the Japanese soldiers continued for a few months, is  
 17 that so?

18 A No. It didn't continue only for a few months.  
 19 It is only on a wider scale and less conspicuous. For  
 20 instance, as late as 1942 one member of my own tribe  
 21 was raped to death. And also I know another case in  
 22 Tien-Wang-Su, that is 1943. Two or three Japanese  
 23 soldiers went to that village and tried to get chickens  
 24 and meat. It happened in one family they found a  
 25 very beautiful young woman and they raped her, and

HSU

CROSS

1 when the husband came back they killed two of the  
 2 three Japanese soldiers. And afterwards the Japanese  
 3 got angry at that and the next day -- let me finish.  
 4 On the following day the Japanese came --

5 Q No, that is sufficient.

6 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Court --

7 THE PRESIDENT: He does not understand.

8 Continue with your answer.

9 A On the following day, then, the Japanese came  
 10 on the pretention that they will give work to some of  
 11 the men in that village. So by this way they get most  
 12 of the men out of that village and take them to work  
 13 and shoot them, machinegun them, and after that the  
 14 Japanese gave the fire and burned that whole village  
 15 out.

16 Q Mr. Witness, you stated earlier that the  
 17 Japanese soldiers set fire to the Russian Legation.  
 18 When did this take place?

19 A 1942.

20 Q What month and what date?

21 A Well, it is in the I can't remember  
 22 the date now.

23 Q You stated earlier that you witnessed this  
 24 fire. By what method was this fire started?

25 A Well, the fire was started by setting it

HSU

CROSS

burning. All storehouses, very easy to set on fire.

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

Q Mr. Witness, you stated earlier that the fire was set by pouring kerosene. You say that you witnessed the fire. Did you or did you not witness this fire?

A You are twisting the facts. What I said in the morning is kerosene, that is the burning of the Russian Legation. That Legation, the houses were very near to the place I lived; that is near Nanking. This is Tien-Wang-Su, about twenty li from Nanking.

HSU

CROSS

1 Q We are asking about the Russian Legation.

2 A All right. What do you want to ask about the  
3 Russian Legation?

4 Q I am talking about the Russian Legation. Will  
5 you please tell the Court the state and circumstances  
6 of the fire concerning the Russian Legation.

7 A Well, the Russian Legation is only about, well,  
8 I shall say a few blocks where maybe I shall say several  
9 hundred yards from the place where I lived. Now, when  
10 they were there where I was, near that place on the road --  
11 because my habit is usually taking a walk in the private  
12 places. That's about at noontime I was walking on there.  
13 As I walked there I see a number of soldiers, Japanese  
14 soldiers there. Of course, at first sight I don't know  
15 what was going on. Later on I see so many so I try not  
16 to see too much, not walk too near to them. But I still  
17 far enough to see that they are doing -- pouring some of  
18 the kerosenes on those--- in those places. After a little  
19 while then I see big smoke burning there.

20 Q You said you were taking a walk. What time was  
21 this, in the morning, or in the afternoon, or in the  
22 evening?

23 A It was about noontime, twelve.

24 Q Was the building burned down totally, completely?

25 A From the effects -- from the aftereffects of



HSU

CROSS

1 course it is burned down, but in the burning I tried  
2 to get away from them places. I didn't try to find out  
3 how much was burned. That is none my business.

4 Q In regard to the necessity of seeing it, that  
5 is beside the point. Could you tell us what the soldiers  
6 were doing?

7 THE MONITOR: Could you tell us what you saw  
8 when you were there.

9 A I saw the soldiers were pouring this oil on  
10 them, and the fire was started. After the burning, of  
11 course, I don't like to -- I didn't try even to stop the  
12 fire nor to have anything to do with that.

13 Q I am not asking whether you had any interest in  
14 it. I am just asking what you actually saw.

15 A I told you what I saw already. Is that not  
16 clear? What is not clear?

17 Q This morning you said that the building was  
18 totally burned. Now you state that you do not know wheth-  
19 er it was completely burned down or not. You just said  
20 that you saw some smoke rising. Which is true?

21 A Well, you are misunderstood me. Where I said  
22 you were -- I understand you were asking me whether I  
23 watched that fire and how much was burned. You are ask-  
24 ing me now that question. This morning I told the whole  
25 instance. Now, after I didn't watch for the whole

HSU

CROSS

1 burning of that, but I can see because so near to my  
2 home it totally burned v. .

3 Q But, Mr. Witness, this Russian Legation was not  
4 burned. Are you dreaming in regard to this, or are you  
5 telling a lie?

6 A Well, I don't know what you mean; the Russian  
7 Legation in Nanking not burned?

8 THE PRESIDENT: Counsel must accept the witness'  
9 answer.

10 MR. KANZAKI: I understand.

11 Q When the Japanese forces entered the city, that  
12 embassy or legation was used by Japanese staff officers.  
13 Are you aware of this fact?

14 A No. I wonder whether we are talking the same  
15 thing. I am talking the burning on January 1 of 1938.  
16 That German Legation -- that Russian Legation were at  
17 the back, or near the lake but inside of the city.

18 THE PRESIDENT: We cannot afford to spend any  
19 more time on this matter. Get on to something else.

20 MR. KANZAKI: I am through.

21 MR. ITO: I am ITO, counsel for defendant  
22 MATSUI.

23 CROSS-EXAMINATION (Continued)

24 BY MR. ITO:

25 Q Mr. Witness, do you know that before the fall

HSU

CROSS

1 of Nanking the Japanese Commander, that is on December 8,  
2 1937, distributed pamphlets from airplanes to the Nanking  
3 Army which stated that the Chinese should -- advising the  
4 Chinese to surrender the city of Nanking in a peaceful  
5 state. Are you aware of this?

6 THE MONITOR: Correction: The date is the 9th  
7 of December instead of the 8th.

8 A Well, I know nothing of this kind. Also I live  
9 in Nanking, and I have two buildings covering about two  
10 miles, but nothing of that kind of pamphlet fell on my  
11 compound. I mean two acres -- if I said any wrong words.

12 THE PRESIDENT: Now, this is on mitigation I  
13 suppose, not on justification.

14 Q Then, Mr. Witness, do you know of this fact  
15 with respect to the advice to surrender which was sent  
16 to the Nanking Army and received by them and stated that  
17 if the Nanking Army would come to a specified place to  
18 negotiate the city of Nanking could be surrendered peace-  
19 fully; but they did not accept this and the clash  
20 occurred, and this started a clash -- and the clash  
21 started a few days later?

22 THE MONITOR: Correction: The fighting broke  
23 out as the result of failure by the Chinese to comply  
24 with the Japanese advice, and the fighting ensued for  
25 several days after that.

HSU

CROSS

1 A Well, even though there is such a fact, I don't  
2 know. But that doesn't come into with the atrocities.  
3 The city was taken and no resistance and there was all  
4 these atrocities happened. And also I understand that  
5 the safety zone, they have already negotiations on both  
6 sides, Japan and China, and also these atrocities happened  
7 in the city as well as in the safety zone.

8 Q When was this safety zone established?

9 A Well, the safety zone was established -- well,  
10 the exact date I don't know because I was not the original  
11 member of that. I was only invited and made member on  
12 the fourth of December, 1937.

13 Q With regard to the safety zone, wasn't this  
14 established by the foreign nationals who feared that  
15 Chinese soldiers would plunder and cause devastation in  
16 their retreat from Nanking?

17 THE MONITOR: Correction: Was not this safety  
18 zone established for the foreigners who feared that  
19 prior to the entrance of Japanese forces -- I correct  
20 myself. Was this not established for the foreign nation-  
21 als prior to the entrance of Japanese forces into the  
22 city because there was a fear that Chinese soldiers as  
23 they were fleeing from Nanking might indulge in pillage  
24 and various atrocious acts?

25 A No, nothing of that kind at all. Where you are

HSU

CROSS

1 just accusing these good foreign members, well, that is  
2 too bad. Well, you see they out of humanity formed a  
3 safety zone. That is concerned by the Chinese and also  
4 by the Japanese, the same word, although I understand you  
5 haven't given a public announcement, acknowledgment. Now,  
6 simply because if you want fighting outside of the safety  
7 zone, not in the safety zone, that is all what they  
8 wished. And also this is simply an act out of humanity.  
9 And also you have to understand this also: There are not  
10 very many foreign members, foreign friends, in the city  
11 at a time when -- on December. And also another thing,  
12 the safety zone, the area of it, is very small, it is  
13 not very big. Now, they are not supposed to guard against  
14 any outrages of the Chinese because they know that the  
15 Chinese -- Nanking is a big city, they can get out of  
16 the city, and also get in a certain part of the city  
17 without coming into the zone.

18 Q Do you know that when the Chinese troops capture  
19 a city or flee from a city they usually cause wanton  
20 destruction, pillage and set fires?

21 THE MONITOR: Correction: Do you know that  
22 Chinese troops, when they flee, they occupy a city, --er  
23 when they are fleeing from a city after defeat, indulge  
24 in arson, or setting of fires, raping and pillage?

25 A Well, I have not known any soldiers, Chinese

HSU

CROSS

1 soldiers, doing that in time of peace when there is no  
2 resistance. And the Chinese soldiers were in the city,  
3 before the Japanese came in and we all lived peacefully  
4 and quietly and no atrocities has been reported on such  
5 a large scale. And what I told in the morning is that  
6 the Japanese after conquering the city, taking the city,  
7 and there is no resistance whatever, the city is in their  
8 hands and the peoples are under their control; then at  
9 that time, only at that time, there is atrocities going  
10 on.

11 Q You are stating things which are extraneous to  
12 the question. For example, like in the second year of  
13 Showa, or 1927, with respect to the so-called Nanking  
14 Incident, Chinese troops attacked buildings belonging to  
15 the British, the Americans and the Japanese, and assaulted  
16 them, and they also pillaged and raped. But do you not  
17 know of the Chinese custom whereby Chinese troops when  
18 they occupy a city, or flee from a city, they usually  
19 indulge in pillage and rape?

20 A Well, what you have just said does not corres-  
21 pond to the actual situation in Nanking. Well, I admit  
22 maybe only a few instances in time of trouble, but what  
23 I am driving at, you say with the Chinese soldiers in the  
24 city they do the same thing. But the Chinese soldiers  
25 were in the city before the Japanese came in. That is

HSU

CROSS

1 one thing. There is no atrocities of that kind in the  
2 city at that time.

3           Then, after the Japanese came into the city  
4 and took the city, the Japanese did all those atrocities  
5 and the Japanese authorities did not try to stop them  
6 although the city was taken after a few days and several  
7 weeks. Not a single proclamation, not a single public  
8 notice put on the street to stop all these atrocities.  
9 Also we in the International Committee, and also the  
10 Chinese, repeatedly complained to your consulate, to  
11 the head of the Special Service, and later on when the  
12 local self-government was formed again we repeated these  
13 things through our local self-government to your embassy  
14 and to the commander-in-chief's office, but not a single  
15 proclamation has been made prohibiting the Japanese  
16 from raping, looting and killing, and also do all sorts  
17 of things.

18           In 1937 -- I haven't finished yet -- in 1937,  
19 and again in 1938, and in 1939 Japan has sent special  
20 men to go into China and find out, investigate these  
21 atrocities, whether they are real; whether they are true,  
22 and how far, and I have complained at least to one bishop,  
23 and one national YMCA leader, and one parliament member,  
24 and several pastors, and I told them the same thing.

25

HSU

CROSS

G  
r  
e  
e  
n  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

THE PRESIDENT: Put the light up. Don't be so slow, please.

A (Continuing) And no effective measures have been taken to prevent them.

THE PRESIDENT: You must exercise closer supervision over the witnesses. The witness must endeavor to keep calm and be satisfied to answer the questions.

MR. ITO: Mr. President, I am asking this witness about the behavior of the Chinese soldiers. The witness is replying with respect to only Japanese soldiers.

THE PRESIDENT: Translate that.

THE INTERPRETER: Mr. President, I am asking the witness with respect to the behavior of the Chinese soldiers. The witness is answering with respect to the Japanese soldiers.

THE PRESIDENT: Yes. I must remind you that rape and the murder of women could never be just reprisals. You are assuming that, if the Japanese did the things said to be done by the witness, they were just reprisals. Rape and the murder of women and such like things could never be just reprisals, and it is useless to continue your cross-examination along those lines.



HSU

CROSS

1 Q Mr. Witness, you stated this morning that  
2 there were no Chinese soldiers in refugee camp; is  
3 this true?

4 A Yes, no armed soldiers. I also made the  
5 statement that the rule of the International Com-  
6 mittee is not to let armed soldiers -- armed military  
7 men to get into the zone. If they want to get into  
8 the zone, they have to disarm.

9 Q Do you know that when the Chinese soldiers  
10 are defeated in battle and flee they usually hide  
11 and take off their clothes and become ordinary  
12 civilians, and when there is the chance, they be-  
13 come plain clothes soldiers?

14 THE MONITOR: Correction: Are you aware of  
15 the fact that Chinese soldiers, when they are de-  
16 feated in battle, try to flee, and, when they can-  
17 not find way of fleeing, they hide their arms, and  
18 so on, and so forth?

19 THE PRESIDENT: A better way to put the  
20 question would be: Is it a fact? However, that is  
21 a trifle.

22 Q Are there any such facts?

23 A There might be; but, still, you see, we con-  
24 sider them as civilians before they gather themselves  
25 together in open resistance. If they are not, they

HSU

CROSS

1 are civilians same as we are here now.

2 Q Then, with respect to the refugee camp  
3 which you were in charge of, were there not many  
4 plain clothes soldiers like that?

5 A No, we do not have many, and we could not  
6 have plain clothes soldiers. As soon as they have  
7 thrown down their arms, we don't consider they are  
8 soldiers.

9 MR. ITO: As far as my competency is con-  
10 cerned, I cannot get the facts or the truth from  
11 this witness, and so I regret that I'll have to  
12 terminate here.

13 THE PRESIDENT: You must not reflect on the  
14 witness. We may have to deal with you if you do.

15 Is there any further cross-examination?

16 MR. WARREN: There is not, your Honor.

17 (Whereupon, the witness was  
18 excused.)

19 - - -

20 THE PRESIDENT: I think this is a convenient  
21 break. We will recess now for fifteen minutes.

22 (Whereupon, at 1445, a recess was  
23 taken until 1500, after which the proceed-  
24 ings were resumed as follows:)

25

W  
o  
l  
f  
&  
S  
p  
r  
a  
t  
t  
1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

MARSHAL OF THE COURT: The Tribunal is now resumed.

THE PRESIDENT: Mr. Sutton.

MR. SUTTON: If it please the Tribunal, the prosecution desires to call as its next witness Shang Teh Yi, a citizen of the Republic of China, who does not speak the English language.

MARSHAL OF THE COURT: Mr. President, the witness is in court and will now be sworn.

- - -

SHANG

DIRECT

1 S H A N G T E H Y I , called as a witness on  
2 behalf of the prosecution, being first duly sworn,  
3 testified as follows:

4 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal, we  
5 desire to offer in evidence International Prosecution  
6 Section document No. 1735, and ask that it be given  
7 an exhibit number in this case.

8 CLERK OF THE COURT: Document 1735, Exhibit  
9 No. 206.

10 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted.

11 (Whereupon, prosecution's Exhibit No.  
12 206 was received in evidence.)

13 DIRECT EXAMINATION

14 BY MR. SUTTON:

15 Q What is your name?

16 A Shang Teh Yi.

17 Q And where do you live?

18 A No. 6 Wu-Chien Road, Nanking.

19 Q Did you sign the paper which you have before  
20 you, which is now marked Exhibit No. 206 in this case?

21 A Yes.

22 Q Are the facts stated therein true and correct?

23 A Yes, they are true.

24 MR. SUTTON: I now ask permission to read the  
25 statement to the Court. (Reading)

SHANG

DIRECT

1 "NAME: Shang Teh Yi  
2 Address: No. 6 Wu-Chien-Ting, Tsai-Chieh-Kia,  
3 Sun-Chow-Lu, West City, Nanking.

4 Age: 32  
5 Native: Nanking  
6 Profession: Retail Trade  
7 Factual Account:

8 "I lived at No. 1 Hua-Sin-Hsiang, Shanghai  
9 Road (in the Refugees' Zone) in 1937. At about 11 a.m.,  
10 16 December of that year, I was arrested by Japanese  
11 soldiers (presumably of the NAKASHIMA Unit). Arrested  
12 at the same time were my elder brother, Teh Jen,  
13 formerly secretary at Klashang Airfield Station,  
14 my cousin Teh Kin, formerly in the silk trade, and  
15 five other neighbors whose names were unknown to me.  
16 Each two of us were bound together by a rope fastening  
17 our hands, and sent to Shiakwan, on the bank of the  
18 Yangtze River. More than 1,000 male civilians were  
19 there and were all ordered to sit down, facing more  
20 than ten machine-guns about 40 or 50 yards in front  
21 of us. We sat there for more than an hour. At about  
22 4 o'clock, a Japanese Army Officer came by motor car,  
23 and he ordered the Japanese soldiers to start machine-  
24 gunning us.

25 "We were ordered to stand up before they did  
the shooting. I slumped to the ground just before the  
firing started, and immediately I was covered with

SHANG

DIRECT

1 corpses and fainted.

2 "After approximately 9 p.m., I climbed out  
3 from the piles of corpses and managed to escape and  
4 go back to my house."

5 (Signed) "Shang Teh Yi"  
6 Date: 7 April 1946

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

1 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal,  
2 the witness is offered for cross-examination.

3 MR. BROOKS: No cross-examination on the part  
4 of the defense.

5 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal,  
6 the prosecution desires to call as its next witness,  
7 Wu Chang Teh, a citizen of the Republic of China, who  
8 does not speak the English language.

9 THE PRESIDENT: The witness now in the box may  
10 go.

11 (Whereupon, the witness was excused.)

12 - - -  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

WU

DIRECT

1 W U C H A N G T E H , called as a witness on be-  
2 half of the prosecution, being first duly sworn,  
3 testified as follows:

4 MR. SUTTON: I offer in evidence, and ask that  
5 it be marked as an exhibit, International Prosecution  
6 Section document No. 2119.

7 CLERK OF THE COURT: Prosecution document No.  
8 2119 received as Exhibit No. 207.

9 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted.

10 (Whereupon, prosecution's Exhibit  
11 No. 207 was received in evidence.)

12 DIRECT EXAMINATION

13 BY MR. SUTTON:

14 Q What is your name?

15 A My full name is Wu Chang Teh.

16 Q And where do you live?

17 A No. 98 A Tan-fen chow, Nanking.

18 MR. SUTTON: May I ask the Tribunal -- I  
19 failed to make a note of it -- the exhibit number as-  
20 signed to document No. 2119?

21 CLERK OF THE COURT: No. 207.

22 MR. SUTTON: Thank you.

23 Q You have before you a paper marked Exhibit  
24 207 in this case. Will you please state whether or  
25 not that is your signature to that paper?



WU

DIRECT

1 A Yes, it is my signature.

2 Q Are the facts stated in that paper -- marked  
3 Exhibit 207 in this case -- true and correct?

4 A Yes, they were true.

5 MR. SUTTON: I now ask permission to read the  
6 document into the evidence.

7 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

8 MR. SUTTON: (Reading)

9 "I, Wu Chang Teh, do certify as follows:

10 "I am 38 years old and am a food merchant in  
11 the city of Nanking, China. In December 1937 and for  
12 a number of years prior to that time I was a policeman  
13 in the city of Nanking. I was never a member of the  
14 Chinese Army. After the fall of the city of Nanking  
15 I along with some three hundred other policemen was  
16 at the Judicial Yuan. We were not armed as all of our  
17 arms had been turned over to the International Committee  
18 for the Nanking Safety Zone. The Judicial Yuan was a  
19 refugee camp and there were many civilians there in  
20 addition to the policeman. On Dec. 15, 1937 the  
21 Japanese soldiers came to the Judicial Yuan and ordered  
22 all the men there to go with them. Two members of the  
23 International Committee told the Japanese that we were  
24 not former soldiers but they ordered these two men away  
25 and forced us to march to the main west gate of the city.

WU

DIRECT

1 "When we got there we were ordered to sit  
2 down just inside the gate. Machine guns were set up  
3 by the Japanese soldiers just outside of and on either  
4 side of the gate. There is a canal outside this gate  
5 and a steep slope leading down to it. There is a  
6 bridge across the canal but it is not directly opposite  
7 the gate.

8 "These persons in groups of over one hundred  
9 at a time were forced to go through the gate at the point  
10 of bayonets. As they went outside they were shot with  
11 machine guns and their bodies fell along the slope and  
12 into the canal. Those who were not killed by the ma-  
13 chine gun fire were stabbed with bayonets by the Japane-  
14 ese soldiers. About sixteen groups each containing  
15 more than 100 persons had been forced through the gate  
16 ahead of me and these persons were killed.

17 "When my group of something over 100 was or-  
18 dered to go through the gate I ran as fast as I could  
19 and fell forward just before the machine guns opened  
20 fire, and was not hit by machine gun bullets and a  
21 Japanese soldier came and stabbed the bayonet in my  
22 back. I lay still as if dead. The Japanese threw  
23 some gasoline on some of the bodies and set them afire  
24 and left. It was then beginning to get dark. The  
25 bodies scattered along the bank and no gasoline was

WU

DIRECT

1 thrown on me. When I saw the Japanese soldiers had  
2 left I climbed out from among the dead bodies and  
3 went into a vacant house where I stayed for 10 days.  
4 Some one near there sent me a bowl of porridge each  
5 day. I then made my way into the city and went to  
6 the University Hospital. Dr. Wilson attended me. I  
7 stayed in the hospital for more than 50 days and when  
8 I got out I went to my native home in Northern Kiangsu.  
9 On the occasion I have described around two thousand  
10 persons former policemen and civilians were killed.

11 "The foregoing statement is true and I make  
12 affidavit to it this 18th day of June 1946 and hereto  
13 affix my signature.

14 "Signed in Chinese characters by Wu Chang Te."

15 Q I would like to ask the witness if he will  
16 exhibit to the Court the wound in his back, which the  
17 affidavit states he received at the hands of a  
18 Japanese soldier?

19 MR. LOGAN: If the Tribunal please, the defense  
20 objects to any such exhibition.

21 THE PRESIDENT: The defense is not really  
22 concerned. We do not wish to see the wounds, unless  
23 the defense questions their existence.

24 MR. SUTTON: The defense may cross-examine  
25 the witness.

1 MR. BROOKS: No questions, your Honor.

2 THE PRESIDENT: That will do, witness.

3 (Whereupon, the witness was excused.)

4 MR. SUTTON: Colonel Morrow will present the  
5 next witness on behalf of the prosecution.

6 THE PRESIDENT: Colonel Morrow.

7 COLONEL MORROW: Has the witness been sworn?

8 MARSHAL OF THE COURT: No, sir, he has not,  
9 Colonel Morrow. Have you called him officially as yet?

10 COLONEL MORROW: I will ask for Chen Fu Pao.

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

CHEN

DIRECT

1 C H E N F U P A O , called as a witness on behalf  
2 of the prosecution, being first duly sworn, testi-  
3 fied as follows:

4 COLONEL MORROW: I desire to present the  
5 document No. 1742, if the Court please.

6 CLERK OF THE COURT: Prosecution's document  
7 No. 1742, received as Exhibit No. 208.

8 THE PRESIDENT: Admitted.

9 (Whereupon, prosecution's Exhibit No.  
10 208 was received in evidence.)

11 DIRECT EXAMINATION

12 BY COLONEL MORROW:

13 Q I will ask the witness to give us his name.

14 A Chen Fu Pao.

15 Q What is your residence and where?

16 A No. 22 Pai Sha Road, Nanking.

17 Q I desire to hand to the witness an exhibit,  
18 being a statement in the Chinese language, and ask that  
19 he look over the same. I will ask the witness --

20 A This is a statement of mine.

21 Q Is that statement correct?

22 A Yes, it is correct.

23 COLONEL MORROW: I ask if I may read this  
24 statement, if the Court please, in the English language.

25 THE PRESIDENT: Yes.

CHEN

DIRECT

1 COLONEL MORROW: (Reading)

2 "Statement of Chen Fu Pao.

3 "On the second day the Japanese were in Nan-  
4 king, 14 December, they took thirty-nine from the  
5 Refugee Area. They were civilian men. They examined  
6 them, and those that had a hat mark on the forehead, or  
7 a callous spot on hands caused by handling a gun, were  
8 brought to a little pond, and taken out on the other side.  
9 I and another were put to one side, and the Japanese used  
10 light machine guns to kill the rest. There were thirty-  
11 seven who were killed in this way, and I saw this. Most  
12 of the people were civilians. I am a resident of Nanking  
13 and knew a number of these people to be civilians in  
14 Nanking. I know one in particular, was a policeman in  
15 Nanking. I was 18 at the time, and lived in Nanking.  
16 They were buried by the Red Swastika Society four months  
17 later and in the meantime the bodies were in a pond where  
18 they had been thrown. I helped throw the bodies in the  
19 pond; by order of the Japanese. This happened in the  
20 day time in the morning near the American Embassy.

21 "This was translated to me by Colonel Tu of  
22 the Chinese Army and is correct. The same day in the  
23 afternoon I saw three Japanese rape a dumb girl, 16  
24 years of age, in a school house, in my presence.

25 "On 16th of December I was taken by Japanese

CHEN

DIRECT

1 soldiers again, and also a lot of healthy young men  
2 and they put them in a crowd and Japanese soldiers  
3 wrestled with them and those that the Japanese could  
4 not defeat wrestling, they killed with the bayonet.  
5 I saw them kill one man for this reason. On the same  
6 day in the afternoon I was taken to Tai Ping road and  
7 saw three Japanese soldiers set a fire to two build-  
8 ings, which were: one, a hotel, the other, a store  
9 or furniture shop. The names of the Japanese soldiers  
10 who set the fire are:

11 "UMAYAHARA and MURAKAMI of the Kuwata Regi-  
12 ment of the Mukai Unit.

13 "I saw another raping case by one Japanese soldier.  
14 The husband of the woman is a photographer. This  
15 happened in daytime, in Nanking, the 3rd after the  
16 Japanese entered Nanking. At that time I lived in the  
17 same house with this lady and a Japanese soldier came  
18 in, and drove all the men out of the apartment, there  
19 being four in the house, including the husband. I  
20 saw the Japanese soldier then go into a room with the  
21 lady, and close the door. I was in an adjoining apart-  
22 ment, and saw this. The lady was pregnant at the time.  
23 The soldier left in about ten minutes. I saw the woman  
24 leave the room at that time and she was weeping."

25 The statement is signed.

1 I will ask if there is any cross-examination,  
2 if the Court please.

3 MR. ITO: I am ITO, Kiyoshi, counsel for the  
4 defendant, MATSUI, Iwane.

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25



CHEN

CROSS

## CROSS-EXAMINATION

BY MR. ITO:

Q In the third line of the Japanese text you say that thirty-nine men were dragged out and you say that they were all civilians. Then in the tenth line of the Japanese text you say that most of the people were civilians and then in the eleventh line you say that "I know that a number of these people were civilians." In the English version they are lines two, ten and eleven.

And then in the following line you say: "I know one in particular was a policeman in Nanking." In this way, concerning whether all these people were civilians or not, you have made four different statements. Which of these is true?

A The policeman I referred to was the policeman who was on duty before the occupation. Later he was a plain-clothes man civilian.

Q No, that is not the point. You have stated first that thirty-nine people were taken from the refugee area and that they were all civilians and then you say that most of them were civilians and then you say that some of them were civilians and then you say one you know in particular was a policeman. But which of these statements is true?

G  
o  
l  
d  
b  
e  
r  
g  
&  
B  
a  
r  
t  
o  
n

CHEN

CROSS

1 A They were all civilians in the refugees,  
2 all of these people. They were all civilians.

3 Q I cannot understand your answer. Did  
4 you get my question?

5 THE PRESIDENT: The answer is plain. He  
6 said they were all civilians. You must accept it.

7 Q Then when you say "most of them," or when  
8 you say "a number of them," are these phrases incor-  
9 rect?

10 A Shall I repeat the story from the begin-  
11 ning?

12 THE PRESIDENT: No, we don't want that.  
13 I think you had better leave it at that. You can  
14 invite us to consider his affidavit and compare  
15 it with his evidence here.

16 Q In the third paragraph of the affidavit  
17 you state that Japanese soldiers set fire to some  
18 buildings and you have even given the names of the  
19 Japanese soldiers who did this. But do you know  
20 whether they did this because they were afraid of  
21 epidemics and were doing it as a measure to prevent  
22 the spread of epidemics?

23 A I don't know of that.

24 Q Next, you have stated that in the last part  
25 of your affidavit, that of a raping case by a

CHEN .

CROSS

1 Japanese soldier, that the husband of the woman  
2 was a photographer, and that a Japanese soldier  
3 came in with the lady and that the lady was pregnant.

4 THE PRESIDENT: Can't you put a short  
5 question without a long introductory statement?

6 Q How did you know that she was pregnant at  
7 the time?

8 A We were living in the same house. After  
9 the Japanese left, the lady was weeping there so we,  
10 as neighbors, went in to console her.

11 Q Since it is natural that a woman with a  
12 husband should be pregnant, I shall not question  
13 you on this point further.

14 Turning to another point. In the middle  
15 of your affidavit you say: "This was translated to  
16 me by Colonel TU of the Chinese Army and is correct."  
17 By this Colonel TU do you mean Colonel Tu Ying-Kuang?

18 A No. When I was relating the story to Colonel  
19 Morrow, this Colonel TU of the Seventh -- is that  
20 War Service Corps?

21 THE PRESIDENT: We have no time to waste  
22 on those things.

23 A When I was relating the story to Colonel  
24 Morrow, Colonel TU was our interpreter.

25 Q Since, according to the Japanese text, we

CHEN

CROSS

1 will have to interpret it in the following manner.  
2 That you, that Colonel TU explained this to you  
3 and that, therefore, you heard it from Colonel TU?

4 A No. As I told you, when I was relating  
5 the story to Colonel Morrow, this Colonel TU was  
6 interpreting for us. That statement, dated 7th of  
7 April, is in the office. You can look into that  
8 statement. I have given the name of the Japanese  
9 military company and the Japanese officer responsible  
10 for it.

11 THE PRESIDENT: Now we have heard enough  
12 about that.

13 MR. ITO: I conclude my cross-examination.

14 MR. BROOKS: No further cross-examining.

15 MR. SUTTON: May it please the Tribunal,  
16 we find ourselves in the position of having run out  
17 of witnesses. At the beginning of the afternoon  
18 session there were four witnesses in reserve. The  
19 others have been sent for but have not yet arrived  
20 at the witness room.

21 THE PRESIDENT: Well, in the circumstances,  
22 we will adjourn now until half past nine on Monday  
23 morning.

24 (Whereupon, at 1548, an adjournment was  
25 taken until Monday, 29 July, 1946 at 0930.)

1871年 1月 1日

...

...

